00031150

Digitized with financial assistance from
Shri Brihad Bhartiya Samaj
on 31 October, 2019

HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES

HISTORY OF THE UNITED STATES

31150

BY

E. BENJAMIN ANDREWS
PRESIDENT OF BROWN UNIVERSITY

ac

WITH MAPS

VOLUME II.

T I i . c

REVISED EDITION

LONDON
SMITH, ELDER, & CO., 15 WATERLOO PLACE
1895

Gnd
973
ad/His
31150

C y Rvd u re' - s
t he l t f Ame u

P ed by t e m Ju hnd & C mpnr
N Y U S. A

CONTENTS

Part Second (Continued)

PERIOD III

THE YEARS OF SLAVERY CONTROVERSY

1840–1860

PAGE

CHAPTER I. SLAVERY AFTER THE MISSOURI COMPROMISE 3

Cotton and Slavery.—Evils of Slavery: Social, Economic. —Slave Insurrections.—Turner's Rebellion.—Abolition in Virginia.—Black Laws.—Lull in Anti-slavery Agitation.—Colonization Society.—Fugitive Slave Laws.—Prigg's Case.—Personal Liberty Laws in the North.—Kidnapping Expeditions.—Domestic Slave-trade.—Non emancipation Laws.—Business Relations between North and South.

CHAPTER II. "IMMEDIATE ABOLITION". . . 12

Renewed Hostility to Slavery.—Lundy.— Garrison.—Affiliations of this Movement.—The New England Anti-slavery Society.—Significance, Purpose, Work.—Methods of Abolitionists. —Southern Opposition.—Northern.—Anti abolitionist Riots at the North.—Murder of Lovejoy.—Outrages against Northern Blacks.—Colored Schools Closed.—Schism among the Abolitionists.—The Liberty Party.—Ultra abolitionists' Unreason.— Why Abolitionism Spread.—Ambiguity of the Constitution.— Seizure of Black Seamen.—Grievances on both Sides.

PAGE

CHAPTER III. THE MEXICAN WAR . . 21

Texas Declares her Independence.—Battle of San Jacinto.—The Democracy Favors Annexation.—Calhoun's Purpose.—Opposition of Clay and the Whigs.—Texas Admitted to the Union.—Causes of the War.—The Nueces *vs.* the Rio Grande.—Preliminary Operations.—Battle of Palo Alto.—Declaration of War.—Monterey Captured.—Santa Anna again President.—Buena Vista.—Taylor's Victory.—Scott Appointed to Chief Command.—Capture of Vera Cruz.—Cerro Gordo.—Jalapa.—Re-enforced by Pierce.—On to the City of Mexico.—Contreras.—Churubusco.—Molino del Rey.—Storming of Chapultepec.—Capture of the Capital.—Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo.—Its Conditions.—The Oregon Question.

CHAPTER IV. CALIFORNIA AND THE COMPROMISE OF 1850 30

Invasion of New Mexico.—Exploration and Seizure of California.—Discovery of Gold.—Resulting Excitement.—Increase of Population.—Gold Yield.—Early Law and Government.—Slavery's Victory.—The Wilmot Proviso.—Taylor President.—Application by California for Admission to the Union.—Clay's Omnibus Bill.—Webster Superseded by Sumner.—Passage of the Omnibus Compromise.—California a State.—Enlargement of Texas.—New Fugitive Slave Law.—Revival of Abolitionism.—Underground Railroad.—Rendition of Anthony Burns.—Other Cases.

CHAPTER V. THE FIGHT FOR KANSAS . . 38

Plots against the Missouri Compromise.—Pierce's Election.—The Kansas-Nebraska Bill.—Abrogation of the Missouri Compromise.—Squatter Sovereignty.—Anti-slavery Emigration to Kansas.—Political Jobbery by the Slavocracy.—Topeka Convention.—Kansas Riots.—Lecompton Constitution.—Opposed by Free-State Men.—Kansas Admitted to the Union.—Assault upon Sumner.—Southern Repudiation of the Douglas Theory.—Dred Scott Decision.—Startling Assumption of the Supreme Court.—Effect.—Counter-theory.

PAGE

CHAPTER VI. SLAVERY AND THE OLD PARTIES 48

Democracy and Whiggism.—Ambiguous Attitude of the Latter toward Slavery.—The Creole Case.—Giddings's Resolutions.—Quincy Adams as an Abolitionist.—The First Gag Law.—Adams's Opposition.—The Second and Third.—Their Repeal.—Pro-slavery Whigs.—Submission to Slavocracy.—Its Insolent Demands.—Death of Whiggism.—Americanism.—The Know-Nothings.—Revolt from the Democracy at the North.

CHAPTER VII. THE CRISIS 57

Consolidation of Anti-slavery Men.—Worse Black Laws.—Schemes for Foreign Conquest.—Lopez's and Walker's Expedition.—Ostend Manifesto.—Supremacy of Slavery.—Rise of Free-soilers.—Incipient Republicanism.—Republican Doctrine.—John Brown's Raid.—Schism between the Northern and the Southern Democrats.—Nomination of Douglas.—Breckenridge and Lane.—Bell and Everett.—Lincoln and Hamlin.—Lincoln's Popularity.—His Election to the Presidency.

CHAPTER VIII. MATERIAL PROGRESS . . 66

Population and Economic Prosperity.—Growth of the West.—Indian Outbreaks.—Improvements farther East.—Canals and Railroads.—The Steam Horse in the West.—Morse's Telegraph.—Ocean Cables.—Minor Inventions.—Petroleum.—Financial Crisis of 1857.

PERIOD IV

CIVIL WAR AND RECONSTRUCTION

1860–1868

CHAPTER I. CAUSES OF THE WAR . . 75

An "Irrepressible Conflict."—Growth of North.—Influence of Missouri Compromise Repeal.—Slavery as Viewed by the South.—Stephens.—Anti-democratic Habits of Thought.—Compact Theory of the Union.—State Consciousness, South.—Argument for the Calhoun Theory.—Secession not Justifiable

by this.—Moderates and Fire-eaters.—Northern Grievances.—Do not Excuse Secession.—Lincoln's Election.—Patriotic and Philanthropic Considerations Ignored.—Prudence also.—Resources of South and of North.

PAGE

CHAPTER II. SECESSION 84

Threats of Secession before 1860.—By New England.—By the South in 1856.—Governor Wise.—The 1860 Campaign.—Attitude of South Carolina.—Of the Gulf States.—Georgia, North Carolina, Louisiana.—Election of Lincoln.—South Carolina will Secede.—Judge Magrath.—The Palmetto State Goes.—Enthusiasm.—The State Plays Nation.—Effect upon Other States.—Mississippi, Florida, Alabama, Georgia, Louisiana, and Texas Follow.—Strong Union Spirit Still.—Vain.—Georgia and Secession.—The Question in Louisiana, Kentucky, Tennessee, Virginia, Missouri, Arkansas, North Carolina.—Seizure of United States Property.—Floyd's Theft.—Fort Moultrie Evacuated for Sumter.—Fort Pickens.—New Orleans Mint.—Twiggs's Surrender.—Theory of Seceding States as to Property Seized.—Southern Confederacy.—Davis President.—His History.—Inaugural Address.—Powers.—Confederate Government and Constitution.—Slavery.—State Sovereignty.—Tariff.—Good Features.—Bright Prospects of the New Power.

CHAPTER III. THE NORTH IN THE WINTER OF 1860–61 95

Apathy.—Disbelief in South's Seriousness.—Divided Opinion.—Suggestions toward Compromise.—Anti coercion.—Convention at Albany.—Mayor Wood of New York.—Buchanan's Vacillation.—Treason all about Him.—Star of the West Fired on.—Inaction of Congress.—Crittenden's Compromise Lost.—Washington Peace Congress.—Vain.—Earnestness of South.—Lincoln Inaugurated.—His Address.—How Received.—His Difficult Task.—Plight of Army, Navy, Treasury.—Sumter Fired on.—Defended.—Evacuated.—Effect at North.—War Spirit.—75,000 Volunteers.—The Sixth Massachusetts in Baltimore.—Washington in Danger.—General Scott's Measures.—March of the Massachusetts Eighth and the New York Seventh.—Their Arrival in Washington.

PAGE

CHAPTER IV. WAR BEGUN 105

Both Sides Expect a Brief Struggle.—South's Advantages.—Call for Three Years' Men.—Butler in Baltimore.—Maryland Saved to the Union.—Alexandria and Arlington Heights Occupied.—Ellsworth's Death.—Each Side Concentrates Armies in Virginia.—Fight at Big Bethel.—At Vienna.—The Struggle in Missouri.—Lyon and Price.—Battle of Wilson's Creek.—Lyon's Death.—Fremont, Hunter, and Halleck in Missouri.—The Contest in Kentucky.—The State becomes Unionist.—In West Virginia.—Lee and McClellan.—Brilliant Campaign of the Latter.—West Virginia Made a State.—Beauregard at Manassas.—Patterson's Advance.—Harper's Ferry Taken.—"On to Richmond."—Battle of Bull Run.—Union Defeat and Retreat.—Losses.—Comments.—Depression at the North, followed by New Resolution.—McClellan.—Army of Potomac Organized.—The Capital Safe.—Affair of Ball's Bluff.—The South Hopeful.—And with Reason.

CHAPTER V. THE STRUGGLE FOR THE MISSISSIPPI VALLEY 117

Three Great Lines of Campaign.—Confederate Posts in Kentucky.—Surrender of Fort Henry.—Siege of Fort Donelson.—Capture.—Kentucky Cleared of Armed Confederates.—Pope Captures Island No. 10.—Gunboat Fight.—Memphis Ours.—Battle of Pittsburg Landing.—Defeat and Victory.—Farragut and Butler to New Orleans.—Battle.—Victory.—The Crescent City Won.—On to Vicksburg.—Iuka.—Corinth.—Grant's Masterly Strategy.—Sherman's Movements.—McClernand's.—Gunboats pass Vicksburg.—Capture of Jackson, Miss.—Battle of Champion's Hill.—Siege of Vicksburg.—Famine Within.—The Surrender.

CHAPTER VI. THE WAR IN THE CENTRE . 130

Bragg Invades Kentucky.—Buell Saves Louisville.—Battle of Perryville.—Of Stone River.—Losses.—Chickamauga.—Thomas the "Rock of Chickamauga."—Grant to the Front.—Bragg's Movements.—Chattanooga.—The "Battle above the Clouds."—Capture of Missionary Ridge.—Bragg's Army Broken

Up.—Grant Lieutenant-General.—Plan of Campaign for 1864–65.—Sherman's Army.—Skirmishes.—Kenesaw Mountain.—Johnston at Bay.—Hood in Command.—Assumes the Offensive.—Sherman in Atlanta.—Losses.—Hood to Alabama and Tennessee.—The March to the Sea.—Living on the Country.—Sherman at Savannah.—Hardee Evacuates.—A Christmas Gift.—The Blow to the Confederacy.—Thomas Crushes Hood.—Sherman Marches North.—Charleston Falls.—Columbia.—Johnston Routed at Bentonville.—Sherman Master of the Carolinas.—Johnston Surrenders.

PAGE

CHAPTER VII. THE VIRGINIA CAMPAIGNS OF 1862–63 144

McClellan to Fortress Monroe.—Yorktown.—Williamsburg.—Fair Oaks.—Lee in Command.—McDowell Retained at Fredericksburg.—Lee Assumes the Offensive.—Gaines's Mill.—The Seven Days' Retreat.—Malvern Hill.—Union Army at Harrison's Landing.—Discouragement.—McClellan Leaves the Peninsula.—Pope's Advance on Richmond.—Retreat.—Jackson in His Rear.—Second Battle of Bull Run.—Pope Defeated.—Chantilly.—McClellan again Commander.—Lee in Maryland.—South Mountain.—Antietam.—Lee Escapes.—McClellan Removed and Burnside in Command.—Fredericksburg.—The Battle.—Hooker General-in-Chief.—Chancellorsville.—Flank Movement by Jackson.—Battle of May 3d.—Lee in Pennsylvania.—Convergence to Gettysburg.—First Day's Battle.—Second Day.—Third.—Pickett's Charge.—Failure.—Lee Escapes.—Significance of this Battle.

CHAPTER VIII. COLLAPSE OF THE CONFEDERACY 158

Grant Comes East.—Battle of the Wilderness.—Flanking.—Spottsylvania.—The "Bloody Angle."—Butler "Bottled Up" at Bermuda.—Grant at the North Anna.—At Cold Harbor.—Change of Base to the James.—Siege of Petersburg.—The Mine.—Washington in Peril.—Operations in Shenandoah Valley.—"Sheridan's Ride."—Further Work at Petersburg.—Distress at the South.—Lee's Problem.—Battle at Five Forks.—Blue-coats

in Petersburg.—Davis and his Government Leave Richmond.—Union Army Enters.—Grant Pursues Lee.—The Surrender.—Assassination of President Lincoln.—Johnston Grounds Arms.—Capture of Jefferson Davis.

PAGE

CHAPTER IX. THE WAR ON THE SEA . . 171

Classification of Naval Deeds.—Our Navy when the War Began.—Enlargement.—Blockading.—Difficulty and Success.—Alternate Tediousness and Excitement.—Blockade-running Tactics.—Expeditions to Aid the Blockade.—To Port Royal.—To Roanoke Island.—Confederate Navy.—The Merrimac.—Sinks the Cumberland, Burns the Congress.—Monitor and Merrimac.—An Era in Naval Architecture and Warfare.—Operations before Charleston.—The Atlanta.—The Albemarle.—Blown Up by Cushing.—Farragut in Mobile Harbor.—Fort Fisher Taken.—Southern Cruisers upon the High Seas.—Destructive.—The Sumter.—The Alabama.—Her Career.—Fights the Kearsarge.—Sinks.

CHAPTER X. FOREIGN RELATIONS.—FINANCE.—EMANCIPATION 183

Views of the War Abroad.—England's Hostility.—Causes.—The Trent Affair.—Seward's Reasoning.—Great Britain's Breach of Neutrality.—Louis Napoleon's Hypocrisy.—Invasion of Mexico.—Maximilian.—War Expenditure.—How Met.—Duties.—Internal Revenue.—Loans.—Bonds.—Treasury Notes.—Treasurer's Report, July 1, 1865.—Errors of War Financiering.—Confederate Finances.—High Prices at South.—Problem of the Slave in Union Lines.—"Contraband of War."—Rendition by United States Officers.—Arguments for Emancipation.—Congressional Legislation.—Abolition in District of Columbia.—Negro Soldiers.—Preliminary Proclamation.—Final.—Effects.—Mr. Lincoln's Difficulties.—Republican Opposition.—Abolitionist.—Democratic.—Copperhead.—Yet he is Re-elected.

CHAPTER XI. RECONSTRUCTION . . . 194

Delicacy of the Task.—Reasons.—The Main Constitutional Question.—Different Views.—The Other Questions.—Answer.—Periods of Reconstruction.—During War.—President Lincoln.

—Johnson.—His Policy.—Carried Out.—Congress Rips up his Work.—Why.—South's Attitude just after War.—Toward Negroes.—XIVth Amendment.—Rejected by Southern States.—Iron Law of 1867.—Carried Through.—Antagonism between President Johnson and Congress.—Attempt to Impeach Johnson.—Fails.

PERIOD V

THE CEMENTED UNION

1868–1888

PAGE

CHAPTER I. POLITICAL HISTORY OF THE LAST TWO DECADES 203

Grant's First Election.—His Work During Reconstruction.—Its Difficulty.—Bayonet Rule in the South.—The Force Act.—Danger to State Independence.—"Liberal Republican" Movement.—The Greeley Campaign, 1872.—Grant again Elected.—Fresh Turmoil at the South.—Culminates in Louisiana.—Blood Shed.—The Kellogg Government Sustained in that State.—A Solid South.—The Election of 1876.—In Doubt.—The Returns.—The Electoral Commission of 1877.—Hayes Seated.—The Electoral Count Act, 1886.—Hayes's Administration.—End of the Bayonet *Régime*.—Garfield's Nomination.—And Election.—And Assassination.—The Guiteau Trial.—Civil Service Reform.—Under Grant.—Under Hayes.—Need of It.—Credit Mobilier Scandal.—The Pendleton Act Passed.—Its Nature and Operation.—Recovery of Power by the Democracy.—Election of Cleveland.—The Civil Service.—Presidential Succession Act of 1886.—Its Necessity.—And Provisions.

CHAPTER II. THE TREATY OF WASHINGTON . 221

A Shining Instance of Peaceful International Methods.—Earlier Negotiations.—"ALABAMA CLAIMS" Insisted On.—A Joint Commission.—Its Personnel.—A Treaty Drafted and Ratified.—Its Provisions.—Northwest Boundary Question.—Minor Claims.—The Alabama Claims.—Geneva Tribunal.—Personnel.—No Pay for Indirect Losses.—Importance of the Case.—The

Three Rules of the Washington Treaty.—Position of Great Britain Relative to These.—Their Meaning.—An Advance in International Law.—The Other Cruisers.—The Award.—Charles Francis Adams.—The Money Paid.—Its History.

PAGE

CHAPTER III. THE FISHERIES DISPUTE . . 229

Fishery Clause of the Treaty of 1783.—Value of the Rights it Conveyed.—Effect of War of 1812.—Convention of 1818.—Its Fateful Provisions.—Troubles in Consequence.—The Reciprocity of 1854.—Repeal in 1865.—New Troubles.—Reciprocity by Treaty of Washington, from 1871.—Repealed in 1885.—Why.—Friction in 1886.—Strict Enforcement by Canada of Convention of 1818.—Severities.—Their Animus.—Pleas of the United States Government.—Threat of Rataliation.—Commission to draft New Treaty.—Indecisive Result.—Northwestern Fisheries Question Settled.

CHAPTER IV. THE NEW SOUTH . . . 244

The Results of Congressional Reconstruction.—Restoration of White Rule.—Ku-Klux-Klan.—Improvement.—Loyalty at the South.—Prosperity.—Cotton.—Manufacturing.—Iron.—Marble—Southern Cities.—Country Parts.—State of Florida.—Prospects of the Negro Race.

CHAPTER V. THE NEW WEST 253

New States and Territories.—Alaska.—Its Resources.—Both Sides of the Rockies filling Up.—Pacific Railways.—Colorado.—California.—Great American Desert.—Tabular View of the West's Growth.—Western Cities.—Minnesota.—St. Paul, Minneapolis, Duluth.—Duluth and Chicago.—Statistics of Immigration.

CHAPTER VI. EXPOSITIONS OF 1876 AND 1893 . 261

Origin of the Plan.—Organization.—Financial Basis.—Conclusion to Make it a World Affair.—To Be at Philadelphia.—Building.—Opening Exercises.—The Main Building.—Arrangement and Contents.—The American Exhibit.—Machinery Hall.

—The Corliss Engine.—Agricultural Hall.—Memorial Hall.—The Art Exhibit.—Horticultural Hall.—Minor Arrangements and Structures.—The Fourth of July Celebration.—Original Copy of the Declaration of Independence Read.—Interest in the Philadelphia Exposition.—The World's Columbian Exposition.—Influences Resulting from the Expositions.

PAGE

CHAPTER VII. ECONOMIC POLITICS . . 271

Reduction of National Debt.—Refunding.—Surplus.—Tariff.—Its History since the War.—Policy of the Political Parties.—Tariffs of 1890 and 1894.—Trusts.—The Dollar of the Fathers.—Resumption of Specie Payments.—The Promissory Greenback.—Fiat Greenback Theory.—And Party.—Great Strike of 1877.—Labor Movement and Labor Question.—Corporations.—Their Evil Influence.—Counter-organizations.—Growth of our Urban Population.

CHAPTER VIII. THE MARCH OF INDUSTRY. . 284

Progress in Cotton Manufacturing.—In Woollen, Iron, and Other.—In Travel.—New Submarine Cables.—First Pacific Railway.—Others.—Consolidation of Railways.—Electric Lighting.—Brooklyn Bridge.—Elevated Railways and New Modes of Surface Traction.—Telephone.—Black Friday.—Chicago Fire.—Boston Fire.—Hard Times of 1873.—Material Betterment for Last Two Decades.

CHAPTER IX. CONCLUSION 295

Contrast of New Things with Old.—Postal Arrangements.—Art.—Extension of Suffrage.—Woman's Rights.—Higher Education for Women.—Socialism and State Socialism.—Widened Scope of Governmental Action.—Restriction of Immigration.—Catholics.—Their Attitude to Public Schools.—Peril to Family.—Mormonism.—Divorce.—Danger from a Secular Spirit.—New Sense of Nationality.—Benign Results.—Greely Expedition to Polar Regions.—Lesson of our National Success to Other Nations.—Our Nation's Duty in World Affairs.

LIST OF MAPS

FACE PAGE

THE UNITED STATES AFTER THE ADMISSION OF ARKANSAS, 1836 20

THE SOUTHERN CONFEDERACY 116

PART SECOND

THE UNITED STATES UNDER THE CONSTITUTION

CONTINUED

PERIOD III.

THE YEARS OF SLAVERY CONTROVERSY

1840–1860

CHAPTER I.

SLAVERY AFTER THE MISSOURI COMPROMISE

SLAVERY would most likely never have imperilled the life of this nation had it not been for the colossal industrial revolution sketched above. Cotton had been grown here since 1621, and some exportation of it is said to have occurred in 1747. Till nearly 1800 very little had gone from the United States to England, for by the old process a slave could clean but five or six pounds a day. In 1784, an American ship which brought eight bags to Liverpool was seized, on the ground that so much could not have been the produce of the United States. Jay's treaty, as first drawn, consented that no cotton should be exported from America. It changed the very history of the country when, in 1793, Eli Whitney invented the saw-gin, by which a slave could clean 1,000 pounds of cotton per day. Slavery at once ceased to be a passive, innocuous institution, promising soon to die out, and became a

means of gain, to be upheld and extended in all possible ways. The cotton export, but 189,316 pounds in 1791, and a third less in 1792, rose to 487,600 pounds in 1793, to 1,610,760 pounds in 1794, to 6,276,300 pounds in 1795, and to 38,118,041 pounds in 1804. Within five years after Whitney's invention, cotton displaced indigo as the great southern staple, and the slave States had become the cotton-field of the world. In 1859 the export was nearly one and four-tenth billion pounds, worth about one hundred and sixty-one and a half million dollars.[1]

So profitable was slavery to vast numbers of individuals because of this, its new status, that men would not notice how, after all, it militated against the nation's supreme interests. It polluted social relations in obvious ways, setting at naught among slaves family ties and the behests of virtue, influences that reacted terribly upon the whites. The entire government of slaves had a brutalizing tendency, more pronounced as time passed. "Plantation manners" were cultivated, which, displaying themselves in Congress and elsewhere, in all discussions and measures relating to the execrable institution, made the North believe that the South was drifting toward barbarism. This was an exaggeration, yet everyone knew that schools in the South were rare and poor, and thought and speech little free as compared with the same in the North. Political power, like the slaves, was in the hands of a few great barons, totally merciless toward even southerners who differed from them. It is of

[1] Johnson, in Lalor's Cyclopædia, Art. "Slavery."

course not meant that virtue, kindliness, intelligence, and fair-mindedness were ever wanting in that section, but they flourished in spite of the slave-system.

Economically slavery was an equal evil, taking as was the superficial evidence to the contrary. No cruelty could make the slave work like a free man, while his power to consume was enormous. Infants, aged, and weak had to be supported by the owner. Even the best slaves were improvident. Everywhere slave labor tended to banish free. Upon slave soil scarcely an immigrant could be led to set foot. Poor whites grew steadily poorer, their lot often more wretched than that of slaves. Invention, care, forethought were as good as unknown among them. Slave labor proved incompetent even for agriculture, impoverishing the richest soil in comparatively few years, whence the perpetual impulse of the slave owners to acquire new territory. The dishonesty of blacks and the danger of slave insurrections made property insecure, at the same time that the system diminished in every community the number of its natural defenders. The result was that the South, the superior of the North in natural resources, was, by 1800, rapidly becoming the inferior in every single element of prosperity.

One of these insurrections was the event of 1831 in Virginia, originating near the southern border. Four slaves in alliance with three whites commenced it by killing several families and pressing all the slaves they could find into their service, until the force was nearly two hundred. They

spread desolation everywhere. Fifty-five white persons were murdered before the insurrection was in hand. Virginia and North Carolina called out troops, and at last all the insurgents were captured or killed. The leader was a black named Nat Turner, who believed himself called of God to give his people freedom. He had heard voices in the air and seen signs on the sky, which, with many other portents, he interpreted as proofs of his divine commission. When all was over Turner escaped to the woods, dug a hole under some fence-rails and lived there for six weeks, coming out only at midnight for food. Driven thence by discovery, he still managed to hide here and there about the plantations in spite of a whole country of armed men in search of him, until at last he was accidentally confronted in the bush by a white man with levelled rifle. He was hanged, November 11th, and sixteen others later. His wife was tortured for evidence, but in vain. Twelve negroes were transported. Very many were, without trial, punished in inhuman ways, the heads of some impaled along the highway as a warning. Partly in consequence of this horrible affair, originated a stout movement for the abolition of slavery in Virginia. This was favored by many of the ablest men in the Old Dominion, but they were overruled.

Danger from the blacks necessitated the most rigid laws concerning them. Time had been when it was thought not dangerous to teach slaves to read. In 1742 Commissary Garden, of the English Society for Propagating the Gospel, founded a negro school in Charleston, where slaves were

taught by slave teachers, these last being the society's property. Honest Elias Neale, the society's catechist in New York, engaged in the same work there, and afterward catechists were so employed in Philadelphia. That organization did much to stir up the planters to teach their slaves the rudiments of Christianity.[1] Now, all this was changed. The strictest laws were made to keep every slave in the most abject ignorance, to prevent their congregating, and to make it impossible for abolitionists or abolitionist literature or influence to get at them.

Inconvenient and perilous as slavery was, southern devotion to it for many reasons strengthened rather than weakened. The masses did not perceive the ruin the system was working, which, moreover, consisted with great profits to vast numbers of influential men and to many localities. Border States little by little gave up the hope of becoming free, the old anti-slavery convictions of their best men faltering, and the practical problem of emancipation, really difficult, being too easily decided insoluble. More significant, owing to a variety of circumstances, the abolition spirit itself greatly subsided early in the present century. Completion of the emancipation process in the North was assured by the action of New York in 1817, proclaiming a total end to slavery there from July 4, 1827. The view that each State was absolute sovereign over slavery within its own borders, responsibility for it and its abuses there ending with the State's own citizens, was now universally accepted. Success in securing the act of 1807,

[1] Eggleston, in *Century*, May, 1888.

making the slave-trade illegal from January 1, 1808, and affixing to it heavy penalties, lulled multitudes to sleep. This act, however, had effect only gradually, and its beneficence was greatly lessened in that it left confiscated negroes to the operation of the local law.

Such quietude was furthered through the formation of the American Colonization Society in 1816, by easy philanthropists and statesmen, North as well as South, who swore by the constitution as admitting no fundamental amendment, admired its three great compromises, loved all brethren of the Union except agitators, and deprecated slavery and the black race about equally; its mission negro deportation, but its actual efforts confined to the dumping of free blacks, reprobates, and castaways in some remote corner of the universe, for the convenience of slave-holders themselves.[1]

Meantime much was occurring to harden northern hostility to slavery into resolute hatred, a fire which might smoulder long but could not die out. The fugitive slave law for the rendition of runaways found in free States operated cruelly at best, and was continually abused to kidnap free blacks. The owner or his attorney or agent could seize a slave anywhere on the soil of freedom, bring him before the magistrate of the county, city, or town corporate in which the arrest was made, and prove his ownership by testimony or by affidavit; and the certificate of such magistrate that this had been done was a sufficient warrant for the return of the poor wretch into bondage. Obstruction, rescue, or

[1] 3 Schouler's *United States*, 198.

aid toward escape was fined in the sum of $500. This is the pith of the fugitive slave act of 1793. It might have been far more mischievous but for the interpretation put upon it in the celebrated case of Prigg *versus* Pennsylvania.

Mr. Prigg was the agent of a Maryland slave-owner. He had in 1839 pursued a slave woman into Pennsylvania, and when refused her surrender by the local magistrate carried her away by force. He was indicted in Pennsylvania for kidnapping, an amicable lawsuit made up, and an appeal taken to the United States Supreme Court. Here, in an opinion prepared by Justice Story, the Pennsylvania statute under which the magistrate had acted, providing a mode for the return of fugitives by state authorities, was declared unconstitutional on the ground that only Congress could legislate on the subject; but it was added that while a free State had no right in any way to block the capture of a runaway, as for example by ordering a jury trial to determine whether a seized person had really been a slave, so as to protect free persons of dark complexion, yet States might forbid their officers to aid in the recovery of slaves. As the act of 1793 did not name any United States officials for this service it became nearly inoperative. Spite of this terrible construction of the constitution, which Chief Justice Taney thought should have included an assertion of a State's duty by legislation to aid rendition, many northern States passed personal liberty laws, besetting the capture of slaves with all possible difficulties thought compatible with the Constitution. The South denounced all such laws

whatever as unconstitutional, and perhaps some of them were.

Constitutional or not, they were needed. There were regular expeditions to carry off free colored persons from the coasts of New York and New Jersey, many of them successful. The foreign slave-trade, with its ineffable atrocities, proved defiant of law and preternaturally tenacious of life. A lucrative but barbarous domestic trade had sprung up between the Atlantic States, Virginia and North Carolina especially, and those on the Gulf, for the supply of the southern market. Families were torn apart, gangs of the poor creatures driven thousands of miles in shackles or carried coastwise in the over-filled holds of vessels, to live or die—little matter which—under unknown skies and strange, heartless masters.

The slave codes of the southern States grew severer every year, as did legislation against free colored people. Laws were passed rendering emancipation more difficult and less a blessing when obtained. The Mississippi and Alabama constitutions, 1817 and 1819 respectively, and all those in the South arising later, were shaped so as to place general emancipation beyond the power even of Legislatures. Congress was even thus early —so it seemed at the North—all too subservient to the slave-holders, partly through the operation of the three-fifths rule, partly from fear that opposition would bring disunion, partly in that ambitious legislators were eager for southern votes. As to the Senate, the South had taken care, Vermont, Kentucky and Tennessee having evened the score,

all before 1800, to allow no new northern State to be admitted unless matched by a southern. In addition to all this, the North had a vast trade with the South, and northern capitalists held to an enormous amount mortgages on southern property of all sorts, so that large and influential classes north had a pecuniary interest in maintaining at the South both good nature and business prosperity.

CHAPTER II.

"IMMEDIATE ABOLITION"

WHILE slavery was thus strengthening itself upon its own soil and in some respects also at the North, its champions ever more alert and forward, its old foes asleep, these very facts were provoking thought about the institution and hostility to it, destined in time to work its overthrow. Interested people saw that slavery, so aggressive and defiant, must be fought to be put down, and that if the Constitution was its bulwark, as all believed, provided a tithe of what the South as well as the North had said of its evils was true, the whole country, and not the South only, was guilty in tolerating the curse. In 1821 Lundy began publishing his *Genius of Universal Emancipation*, seconded, from 1829, by the more radical Garrison. In 1831 Garrison founded the *Liberator*, whose motto, "immediate and unconditional emancipation," was intended as a rebuke to the tame policy of the colonizationists. "I am in earnest," said the plucky man, when his utterances threatened to cost him his life, "I am in earnest, I will not equivocate, I will not excuse, I will not retreat a single inch, and I will be heard." These were

startling tones. Had God turned a new prophet loose in the earth?

The abolition spirit was a part of the general moral and religious quickening we have mentioned as beginning about 1825, and revealing itself in revivals, missions, a religious press, and belief in the end of the world as approaching. The ethical teaching of the great German philosopher, Immanuel Kant, denouncing all use of man as an instrument, began to take effect in America through the writings of Coleridge. Hatred of slavery was gradually intensified and spread. In 1832 rose the New England Anti-Slavery Society. In 1833 the American Society was organized, with a platform declaring "slavery a crime."

This declaration marked one of the most important turning-points in all the history of the United States. It drew the line. It brought to view the presence in our land of two sets of earnest thinkers, with diametrically opposite views touching slavery, who could not permanently live together under one constitution. May, Phillips, Weld, Whittier, the Tappans, and many other men of intellect, of oratorical power, and of wealth, drew to Garrison's side. State abolition societies were organized all over the North, the Underground Railroad was hard worked in helping fugitives to Canada, and fiery prophets harangued wherever they could get a hearing, demanding "immediate abolition" in the name of God.

The Abolitionists proposed none but moral arms in fighting slavery—papers, pamphlets, public addresses, personal appeals. They deprecated re-

bellion by slaves, and urged congressional action against slavery only in the District of Columbia, in the territories, and at sea, where the absolute jurisdiction of the general Government was admitted by nearly all. Nevertheless, southern hostility to them was indescribably ferocious and uncompromising. They were charged with instigating all the slave insurrections and insubordination that occurred, and with having made necessary the new, more diabolical discipline over blacks, both bond and free. Southern papers and Legislatures incessantly commanded that Abolitionists be delivered up to southern justice, their societies and their publications suppressed by law, and abolitionist agitation made penal. There were northerners quite ready to grant these demands. Rage against abolitionism, much of it, if possible, even more unreasoning, prevailed at the North. Garrison says that he found here "contempt more bitter, detraction more relentless, prejudice more stubborn, and apathy more frozen than among slave-owners themselves." The Church, politics, business—all interests save righteousness—seemed to bow to the false god. Of all utterances against abolitionism, those of clergymen and religious journals were the bitterest. To call slavery sin was the unpardonable sin.

In 1834, on July 4th, a mob broke up a meeting of the American Anti-Slavery Society in New York. A few days after, Louis Tappan's house was sacked in the same manner, as well as several churches, school-houses, and dwellings of colored families. At Newark, N. J., a colored man who

had been introduced into a pulpit by the minister of the congregation, was forcibly wrenched therefrom and carried off to jail. The pulpit was then torn down and the church gutted. In Norwich, Conn., the mob pulled an abolitionist lecturer from his platform and drummed him out of town to the rogue's march. In 1836 occurred the murder of Rev. E. P. Lovejoy, at Alton, Ill. He was the publisher of the *Observer*, an abolitionist sheet, which had already been three times suspended by the destruction of his printing apparatus. It was at a meeting held in Faneuil Hall over this occurrence that Wendell Phillips first made his appearance as an anti-slavery orator. Also in 1836 the office at Cincinnati in which James G. Birney published *The Philanthropist*, was sacked, the types scattered, and the press broken and sunk in the river. Birney was a southerner by birth, and had been a slave-holder, but had freed his slaves. Between 1834 and 1840 there was hardly a place of any size in the North where an Abolitionist could speak with certain safety.

The destruction of colored people's houses became for a time an every-day occurrence in many northern cities. For some years the condition of the free blacks and their friends was hardly better north than south. Schools for colored children were violently opposed even in New England. One kept by Miss Prudence Crandall, at Canterbury, Conn., was, after its opponents had for months sought in every manner to close it, destroyed by fire. The lady herself was imprisoned,

and such schools were by law forbidden in the State. A colored school at Canaan, N. H., was voted a nuisance by a meeting of the town; the building was then dragged from its foundations and ruined. Many who aided in these deeds belonged to what were regarded the most respectable classes of society.

Owing to the vagaries and unpatriotism of the Garrisonians, there was from 1840 schism in the abolition ranks. Garrison and his closest sympathizers were very radical on other questions besides that concerning the sin of slavery. They declared the Constitution "a league with death and a covenant with hell" because it recognized slavery. They would neither vote nor hold office under it. They upbraided the churches as full of the devil's allies. They also advocated community of property, women's rights, and some of them free love. Others, as Birney, Whittier, and Gerrit Smith, refused to believe so ill of the Constitution or of the churches, and wished to rush the slavery question right into the political arena. The division, far from hindering, greatly set forward the abolitionist cause. Perhaps neither abolition society, as such, had, after the schism of 1840, quite the influence which the old exerted at first, but by this time a very general public opinion maintained anti-slavery propagandism, pushing it henceforth more powerfully than ever, as well as, through broader modes of utterance and action, more successfully. Whittier, Lowell, Longfellow, each enlisted his muse in the crusade. Wendell Phillips's tongue was a flaming sword. Clergymen, politi-

cians, and other people entirely conservative in most things, felt free to join the new society of political Abolitionists.

In 1839 the Governor of Virginia made a requisition on Governor Seward of New York, to send to Virginia three sailors charged with having aided a slave out of bondage. Seward declined, on the ground that by New York law the sailors were guilty of no crime, as that law knew nothing of property in man. He accompanied his refusal with a discussion of slavery and slave law quite in the abolitionist vein. To a like call from Georgia Seward responded in the same way, and his example was followed by other northern governors. The Liberty Party took the field in 1840, Birney and Earle for candidates, who polled nearly seven thousand votes. Four years later Birney and Morris received sixty-two thousand three hundred.

It would be a mistake, let us remember, to regard the anti-abolitionist temper at the North wholly as apathy, friendliness to slavery, or the result of truckling to the South. Besides sharing the general fanaticism which mixed itself with the movement, the Abolitionists ignored the South's dilemma—the ultras totally, the moderates too much. "What would you do, brethren, were you in our place?" asked Dr. Richard Fuller, of Baltimore, in a national religious meeting where slavery was under debate; "how would you go to work to realize your views?" Dr. Spencer H. Cone, of New York, roared in reply, "I would proclaim liberty throughout all the land, to all the inhabitants

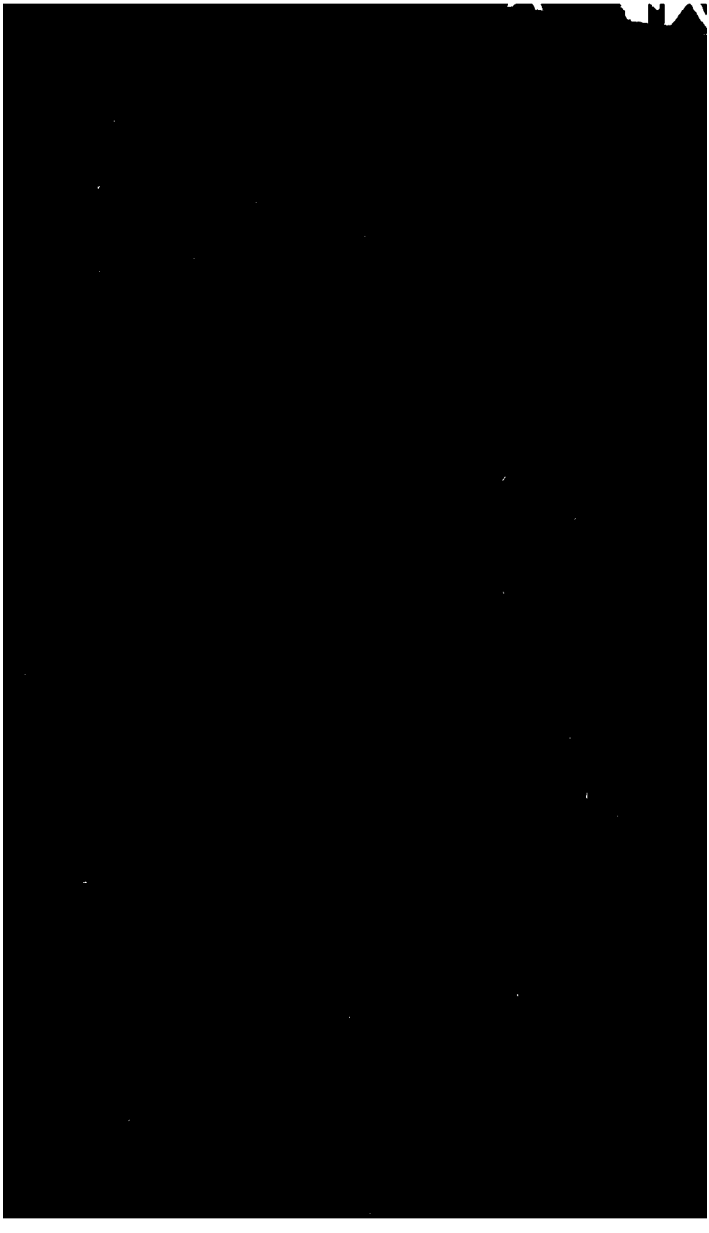
thereof." But the thing was far from being so simple as that. Denouncing the Constitution as Garrison did could not but affront patriotic hearts. It was impolitic, to say the least, to import English co-agitators, who could not understand the intricacies of the subject as presented here.

The fact that, defying slave-masters and sycophants alike, the cause of abolition still went on conquering and to conquer, was due much less to the strength of its arguments and the energy of its agitation than to the South's wild outcry and preposterous effrontery of demand. Conservative northerners began to see that, bad as abolitionism might be, the means proposed for its suppression were worse still, being absolutely subversive of personal liberty, free speech, and a free press. More serious was the conviction, which the South's attitude nursed, that such mortal horror at Abolitionists and their propaganda could only be explained by some sort of a conviction on the part of the South itself that the Abolitionists were right, and that slavery was precisely the heinous and damnable evil they declared it to be. It was mostly in considering this aspect of the case that the Church and clergy more and more developed conscience and voice on freedom's side, as practical allies of abolitionism. In each great denomination the South had to break off from the North on account of the latter's love to the black as a human being. Men felt that an institution unable to stand discussion ought to fall. By 1850 there were few places at the North where an Abolitionist might not safely speak his mind.

It were as unjust as it would be painful to view this long, courageous, desperate defence of slavery as the pure product of depravity. The South had a cause, in logic, law, and, to an extent, even in justice. Both sides could rightly appeal to the Constitution, the deep, irrepressible antagonism of freedom against bondage having there its seat. The very existence of the Constitution presupposed that each section should respect the institutions of the other. What right, then, had the North to allow publications confessedly intended to destroy a legal southern institution, deeply rooted and cherished? From a merely constitutional point of view this question was no less proper than the other: What right had the South, among much else, to enact laws putting in prison northern citizens of color absolutely without indictment, when, as sailors, they touched at southern ports, and keeping them there till their ships sailed? This outrage had occurred repeatedly. What was worse, when Messrs. Hoar and Hubbard visited Charleston and New Orleans, respectively, to bring amicable suits that should go to the Supreme Court and there decide the legality of such detention, they were obliged to withdraw to escape personal violence.

It was said that the North must bear these incidents of slavery, so obnoxious to it, in deference to our complex political system. Yes, but it was equally the South's duty to bear the, to it, obnoxious incidents of freedom. Southern men seem never to have thought of this. Doubtless, as emancipation in any style would have afflicted it, the South could not but account all incitements

thereto as hardships; but the North must have suffered hardships, if less gross and tangible, yet more real and galling, had it acceded to southern wishes touching liberty of person, speech, and the press. That at the North which offended the South was of the very soul and essence of free government; that at the South which aggrieved the North was, however important, certainly somewhat less essential. Manifestly, considerations other than legal or constitutional needed to be invoked in order to a decision of the case upon its merits, and these, had they been judicially weighed, must, it would seem, all have told powerfully against slavery. Not to raise the question whether the black was a man, with the inalienable rights mentioned in the Declaration of Independence, the South's own economic and moral weal, and further—what one would suppose should alone have determined the question—its social peace and political stability loudly demanded every possible effort and device for the extirpation of slavery. That this would have been difficult all must admit; that it was intrinsically possible the examples of Cuba and Brazil since sufficiently prove.



THE UNITED STATES
AFTER
ADMISSION OF ARKANSAS, 1836.
BRITISH POSSESSIONS
NORTHWEST TERRITORY NOT YET ADMITTED
ILLINOIS
MICHIGAN
GULF OF MEXICO

CHAPTER III.

THE MEXICAN WAR

Attracted by fertility of soil and advantages for cattle-raising, large numbers of Americans had long been emigrating to Texas. By 1830 they probably comprised a majority of its inhabitants. March 2, 1836, Texas declared its independence of Mexico, and on April 10th of that year fought in defence of the same the decisive battle of San Jacinto. Here Houston gained a complete victory over Santa Anna, the Mexican President, captured him, and extorted his signature to a treaty acknowledging Texan independence. This, however, as having been forced, the Mexican Government would not ratify.

Not only did the Texans almost to a man wish annexation to our Union, but, as we have seen, the dominant wing of the democratic party in the Union itself was bent upon the same, forcing a demand for this into their national platform in 1840. Van Buren did not favor it, which was the sole reason why he forfeited to Polk the democratic nomination in 1844. Polk was elected by free soil votes cast for Birney, which, had Clay received them, would have carried New York and Michigan for him and thus elected him; but the result was

hailed as indorsing annexation. Calhoun, Tyler's Secretary of State, more influential than any other one man in bringing it about, therefore now advocated it more zealously than ever. Calhoun's purpose in this was to balance the immense growth of the North by adding to southern territory Texas, which would of course become a slave State, and perhaps in time make several States. As the war progressed he grew moderate, out of fear that the South's show of territorial greed would give the North just excuse for sectional measures.

Henry Clay, with nearly the entire Whig Party, from the first opposed the Tyler-Calhoun programme. Clay's own reason for this, as his memorable Lexington speech in 1847 disclosed, was that the United States would be looked upon "as actuated by a spirit of rapacity and an inordinate desire for territorial aggrandizement." His party as a whole dreaded more the increment which would come to the slave power. After much discussion in Congress, Texas was annexed to the Union on January 25, 1845, just previous to Polk's accession. June 18th, the Texan Congress unanimously assented, its act being ratified July 4th by a popular convention. Thus were added to the United States 376,133 square miles of territory.

The all-absorbing question now was where Texas ended: at the Nueces, as Mexico declared, or at the Rio Grande, as Texas itself had maintained, insisting upon that stream as of old the bourne between Spanish America and the French Louisiana. Mexico, proud, had recognized neither

the independence of Texas nor its annexation by the United States, yet would probably have agreed to both as preferable to war, had the alternative been allowed. To be sure, she was dilatory in settling admitted claims for certain depredations upon our commerce, threatened to take the annexation as a *casus belli*, withdrew her envoy and declined to accept Slidell as ours, and precipitated the first actual bloodshed. Yet war might have been averted, and our Government, not Mexico's, was to blame for the contrary result. Slidell played the bully, the navy threatened the coast, our wholly deficient title, through Texas, to the Nueces-Rio-Grande tract was assumed without the slightest ado to be good, and when General Arista, having crossed the river in Taylor's vicinity, repelled the latter's attack upon him, the President, followed by Congress, falsely alleged war to exist "by act of the Republic of Mexico."

During most of 1845, General Zachary Taylor was at Corpus Christi on the west bank of the Nueces, in command of three thousand six hundred men. The first aggressive movement occurred in March of the following year, when Taylor, invading the disputed territory by command from Washington, advanced to the Rio Grande, opposite Matamoras. April 26th, a Mexican force crossed the river and captured a party of American dragoons which attacked them. Taylor drew back to establish communication with Point Isabel, and on advancing again toward the Rio Grande, May 8th, found before him a Mexican force of nearly twice his numbers, commanded by Arista. The battle

of Palo Alto ensued, and next day that of Resaca de la Palma, Taylor completely victorious in both. May 13th, before knowledge of these actions had reached Washington, warranted merely by news of the cavalry skirmish on April 26th, Congress declared war, and the President immediately called for fifty thousand volunteers. In July Taylor was re-enforced by Worth, and proceeded to organize a campaign against Monterey, a strongly fortified town some ninety miles toward the City of Mexico. This place was reached September 19th, and captured on the 22d, after hard fighting and severe losses on both sides. An armistice of eight weeks followed.

Meantime a revolution had occurred in Mexico. The banished Santa Anna was recalled, and as President of the Republic assumed command of the Mexican armies. On February 23, 1847, occurred one of the most sanguine but brilliant battles of the war, that of Buena Vista. Taylor, learning that a Mexican force was advancing under Santa Anna, at least double the fifty-two hundred left him after the requisition upon him which General Scott had just made, drew back to the strong position of Buena Vista, south of Saltillo. Here Santa Anna, having through an intercepted dispatch learned of Taylor's weakness, ferociously fell upon him with a force twelve thousand strong. On right and centre, by dint of good tactics and bulldog fighting, Taylor held his own and more, but the foe succeeded at first in partly turning and pushing back his left. The Mexican commander bade Taylor surrender, but was refused, whence

the saying that "Old Rough and Ready," as they called Taylor, "was whipped but didn't know it."

To check the flanking movement he sent forward two regiments of infantry, well supported by dragoons and artillery, who charged the advancing mass, broke the Mexicans' column, and sent them fleeing in confusion. This saved the day. The American loss was seven hundred and forty-six, including several officers, among them Lieutenant-Colonel Clay, son of the Kentucky statesman. Colonel Jefferson Davis, one day to be President of the Southern Confederacy, caused during this conflict great havoc in the enemy's ranks with his Mississippi riflemen. Santa Anna's loss was two thousand.

General Winfield Scott had meantime been ordered to Mexico as chief in command. Taylor was a Whig and the Whigs whispered that his martial deeds were making the democratic cabinet dread him as a presidential candidate. But Scott was a Whig, too, and if there was anything in the surmise, his victorious march must have given Polk's political household additional food for reflection. Scott's plan was to reduce Vera Cruz, and thence march to the Mexican capital, 200 miles away, by the quickest route. Vera Cruz capitulated March 27, 1847.

Scott straightway struck out for the interior. He was bloodily opposed at Cerro Gordo, April 18th, and at Jalapa, but he made quick work of the enemy at both these places. In the latter city, after his victory, he awaited promised re-enforcements. When the last of these had arrived,

August 6th, under General Franklin Pierce, so that he could muster about fourteen thousand men, he advanced again. August 10th the Americans were in sight of the City of Mexico. This was a natural stronghold, and art had added to its strength in every possible way. Except on the south and west it was nearly inaccessible if defended with any spirit. Scott of course directed his attack toward the west and south sides of the city. The first battle in the environs of the capital was fiercely fought near the village of Contreras, and proved an overwhelming defeat for the Mexicans. Two thousand were killed or wounded, while nearly one thousand, including four generals, were captured, together with a large quantity of stores and ammunition. The American loss was only sixty killed and wounded.

The survivors fled to Churubusco, farther toward the city, where, with every advantage of position, Santa Anna had united his forces for a final stand. An old stone convent, which our artillery could not reach till late in the action, was utilized as a barricade, and from this the Mexicans poured a most deadly fire upon their assailants. The Americans were victorious, as usual, but their loss was fearful, 1,000 being killed or wounded, including seventy-six officers. A truce to last a fortnight was now agreed upon, but Scott, seeing that the Mexicans were taking advantage of it to strengthen their fortifications, did not wait so long. He now had about eight thousand five hundred men fit for duty, and sixty-eight guns. Hostilities were renewed September 7th, by the storm and capture,

costing nearly eight hundred men, of Molino del Rey, or "King's Mill," a mile and a half from the city.

Possession of the Molino opened the way to Chapultepec, the Gibraltar of Mexico, 1,100 yards nearer the goal. As it was built upon a rock 150 feet high, impregnable on the north and well-nigh so on the eastern and most of the southern face, only the western and part of the southern sides could be scaled. But the stronghold was the key to the city, and after surveying the situation, a council of war decided that it must be taken. Two picked American detachments, one from the west, one from the south, pushed up the rugged steeps in face of a withering fire. The rock-walls to the base of the castle had to be mounted by ladders. This was successfully accomplished; the enemy were driven from the building back into the city, and the castle and grounds occupied by our troops. A large number of fugitives were cut off by a force sent around to the north.

To pierce the city was even now by no means easy. The approach was by two roads, one entering the Belen gate, the other the San Cosme. General Quitman advanced toward the Belen, but at the entrance was stopped by a destructive cannonade from the citadel itself. Those fighting their way toward the San Cosme succeeded in entering the city, Lieutenant U. S. Grant making his mark in the gallant work of this day. The city was evacuated that night, and on the 15th of September, 1847, was fully in the hands of Scott.

The treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo was signed

on February 2, 1848. It established the Rio Grande as the boundary between the two countries, and New Mexico, of course including what is now Arizona and also California, was ceded to the United States for $15,000,000. The United States also assumed, to the sum of $3,250,000, the claims of American citizens upon Mexico. For Gadsden's Purchase, in 1853, between the Gila River and the Mexican State of Chihuahua, we paid $10,000,000 more. Our territory thus received in all, as a consequence of the Mexican War, an increment of 591,398 square miles.

Inseparable from the politics of the Mexican War is the Oregon question, since Oregon's re-occupation and "fifty-four forty or fight" had been democratic cries for securing to Polk west-northern votes in 1844. We had, however, no valid claim so far north, except against Russia—by the treaty of 1824. The Louisiana purchase, indeed, had vested us with whatever—very dubious—rights France had upon the Pacific, and the Florida treaty of 1819 gave us the far better title of Spain to the coast north of 42°. This treaty, with Gray's discovery of the Columbia in 1792, Lewis and Clarke's official explorations of the Columbia valley in 1804–05–06, England's retrocession, in 1818, of Astoria, captured during the War of 1812, and extensive actual settlements upon the river by American citizens from 1832 on, made our claim perfect up to 49° at least. This parallel the convention with Great Britain in 1818 had already fixed as our northern line from the Lake of Woods to the Rocky Mountains. Between this and 54°

40′, England's title, from exploration and settlement, was superior to ours, which was based upon alleged old Spanish discovery. The same convention of 1818, renewed in 1827, opened the Oregon country to occupation by settlers from both nations. Increase of immigration rendering a fixing of jurisdictions imperative, England pressed for the line of the Columbia below its intersection of the forty-ninth parallel. We had twice offered to settle upon 49°, which limit the rapid growth of our population in the region induced England in 1846 to accept. Whether Polk's blustering demand for "all Oregon," which came near bringing on war with England, and his much condemned recession later, were mere opportunist acts, is still a question. Many consider them pieces of a deep-laid policy by Polk to tole Mexico to war in hope of England's aid, then, suddenly pacifying England, to devour Mexico at his leisure.

CHAPTER IV.

CALIFORNIA AND THE COMPROMISE OF 1850

ONE of the campaigns at the beginning of the Mexican War was that of General Stephen W. Kearney, from Fort Leavenworth, against New Mexico. It was opened in May, 1846. He invaded the country without much opposition, arrived at Santa Fé August 18th, having marched eight hundred and seventy-three miles, declared the inhabitants free from all allegiance to Mexico, and formed a territorial government over them as United States subjects.

Captain John C. Fremont had previously, but in the same year, 1846, been sent to California at the head of an exploring expedition, and in May he was notified to remain in the country in anticipation of hostilities. On June 15th he captured Samona. Meanwhile, Commodore Sloat was erecting our flag over the towns on the coast. In July Sloat was superseded by Commodore Stockton, who routed the Mexican commander, De Castro, at Los Angeles, joined Fremont, and on August 13th seized Monterey, the then capital. The two commanders now placed themselves at the head of a provisional government for California.

In 1848, on the same day and almost at the

same hour when the peace of Guadalupe Hidalgo was concluded, gold was discovered in California. It was on the land of one Sutter, a Swiss settler in the Sacramento Valley, as some workmen were opening a flume for a mill. In three months over 4,000 persons were there, digging for gold with great success. By July, 1849, it is thought, 15,000 had arrived. Nearly all were forced to live in booths, tents, log huts, and under the open sky. The sparse population previously on the ground left off farming and grazing and opened mines. People became insane for gold. Immigrants soon came in immense hordes. In 1846, aside from roving Indians, California had numbered not much over 15,000 inhabitants. By 1850 it seems certain that the territory contained no fewer than 92,597. The new-comers were from almost every land and clime—Mexico, South America, the Sandwich Islands, China—though, of course, most were Americans. The bulk of these hailed from the Northwest and the Northeast. To this land of promise the sturdy pioneers from the Mississippi Valley found their way on foot, on horseback, or in wagons, over the Rocky Mountains and the Sierras, following trails previously untrodden by civilized man. Those from the East made long detours around Cape Horn or across the Isthmus of Panama.

The yield of gold from the virgin placers was enormous, a laborer's average the first season being perhaps an ounce a day, though many made much more. During the first two years about $40,000,000 worth of gold was extracted. Accord-

ing to careful estimates the gold yield of the United States, mostly from California, which had been only $890,000 in 1847, increased to $10,000,000 in 1848, to $40,000,000 in 1849, to $50,000,000 in 1850, to $55,000,000 in 1851, to $60,000,000 in 1852, and in 1853 to $65,000,000.

Most interesting were the spontaneous governmental and legal institutions which arose in these motley communities, some of them finding their originals in the English mining districts, others in Mexico and Spain, and still others recalling the mining customs of mediæval Germany. For a time many camps had each its independent government, disconnected from all human authority around or above. Some of these were modelled after the Mexican Alcaldeship, others after the New England town. Over those who rushed to the vicinity of Sutter's mill that gentleman became virtual Alcalde, though he was not recognized by all. The men first opening a placer would seek to pre-empt all the adjoining land, giving up only when others came in numbers too strong for them. Officers were elected and new customs sanctioned as they were needed. Partnerships were sacredly maintained, yet by no other law than that of the camp. Crimes against property and life seem to have been infrequent at first, but the unparalleled wealth toled in and developed a criminal class, which the rudimentary government could not control. San Francisco formed in 1851 a vigilance committee of citizens, by which crimes could be more summarily and surely punished. The pioneer banking house in California began business

at San Francisco in January, 1849. The same month saw the first frame house on the Sacramento, near Sutter's Fort.

The vast acquisition of territory by the Mexican War seemed destined to be a great victory for slavery, because nearly all of it lay south of 36° 30′, and hence by the Missouri Compromise could become slave soil. But there was the complication that under Mexico all this wide realm had been free. To exist there legally slavery must therefore be established by Congress, making the case very different from the cases of Louisiana, Florida, and Texas, which came under United States authority already burdened. This predisposed many who were not in general opposed to slavery, against extending the institution hither. Early in the war a bill had passed the House, failing almost by accident in the Senate, which contained the famous Wilmot Proviso, so named from its mover in the House, that, except for crime, neither slavery nor involuntary servitude should ever exist in any of the territories to be annexed. Wilmot was a Democrat, and at this time a decided majority of his party favored the proviso. But the pro-slavery wing rallied, while the Whigs, disbelieving in the war and in annexation both, offered the proviso Democrats no hearty aid. In consequence it was defeated both then and after the annexation.

The election of 1848 went for the Whigs, and the next March 4th, General Taylor became President. Though a southerner and a slave-holder, he was moderate and a true patriot. So rapid had been the influx into California that the Territory

needed a stable government. Accordingly, one of Taylor's first acts as President was to urge California to apply for admission to statehood. General Riley, military governor, at once called a convention, which, sitting from September 1st to October 13th, framed a constitution and made request that California be taken into the Union. This constitution prohibited slavery, and thus a new firebrand was tossed into the combustible material with which the political situation abounded. By this time nearly all the friends of freedom were for the proviso, but its enemies as well had greatly increased. The immense growth, actual and prospective, of northern population, greatly inspired one side and angered the other.

Resort was now had again to the old, illusive device of compromise, Clay being the leader as usual. He brought forward his "omnibus bill," so called because it threw a sop to everybody. It failed to pass as a single measure, but was broken up and enacted piecemeal. Stubborn was the fight. Radicals of the one part would consent to nothing short of extending the Missouri Compromise line to the Pacific; those of the other stood solidly for the unmodified proviso.

In this crisis occurred President Taylor's death, July 9, 1850, which was most unfortunate. He was known not to favor the pro-slavery aggression which, in spite of Clay's personal leaning in the opposite direction, the omnibus bill embodied. Mr. Fillmore, as also Webster, whom he made his Secretary of State, nervous with fear of an anti-slavery reputation, went fully Clay's length. The

debate on this compromise of 1850 was the occasion when Webster deserted the free-soil principles which were now dominant in New England. His celebrated speech of March 7th marked the crisis of his life. He argued that the proviso was not needed to prevent slavery in the newly gotten district, while its passage would be a wanton provocation to the South. From this moment Massachusetts dropped him. When she next elected a senator for a full term, it was Charles Sumner, candidate of the united Democrats and Freesoilers, who went to Congress pledged to fight slavery to the death.

But the omnibus compromises were passed. California was, indeed, admitted free, September 9, 1850—the thirty-first State in order—and slave trade in the District of Columbia slightly alleviated. On the other hand, Texas was stretched to include a huge piece of New Mexico that was free before, and paid $10,000,000 to relinquish further claims. This was virtually a bonus to holders of her scrip, which from seventeen cents the dollar instantly rose to par. New Mexico and Utah were to be organized as Territories without the proviso, and were made powerless to legislate on slavery till they should become States. Least sufferable, a fugitive slave law was passed, so Draconian that that of 1793, hitherto in force, was benign in comparison. It placed the entire power of the general Government at the slave-hunter's disposal, and ordered rendition without trial or grant of habeas corpus, on a certificate to be had by simple affidavit. By-standers, if bidden, were obliged to help

marshals, and tremendous penalties imposed for aid to fugitives.

This act facilitated the recovery of fugitives at first, but not permanently. Many who had labored for its passage soon saw that it was a mistake. It powerfully fanned the abolition flame all over the North. New personal liberty laws were enacted. A daily increasing number adopted the view that the new act was unconstitutional, on the ground that the Constitution places the rendition of slaves as of criminals in the hands of States, and guarantees jury trial, even upon title to property, if over twenty dollars in value. After the act had been justified in the courts, multitudes of moderate northern men urged to a dangerous degree the doctrine of state rights in defence of the liberty laws. Others adopted the cry of the "higher law," and without joining Garrison in denouncing the Government, did not hesitate to oppose in every possible way the operation of this drastic legislation for slave-catching.

The country's growth made escape from bondage continually easier and easier. Once across the border a runaway was sure to find many friends and few enemies. Openly, or, if this was required, by stealth, he was passed quickly along to the Canada line. Between 1830 and 1860 over thirty thousand slaves are estimated to have taken refuge in Canada. By 1850, probably no less than twenty thousand had found homes in the free States. The new law moved many of these across into the British dominions. It was hence increasingly difficult for the slave-owner to recover stray prop-

erty. All possible legal obstructions were placed in his way, and when these failed he was likely still to be opposed by a mob which might prove too powerful for the marshal and any posse which he could gather.

In Boston, when a slave named Shadrach was arrested, his friends made a sudden dash, rescued him from the officers and freed him. With Simms the same was attempted, but in vain. The removal of Anthony Burns from that city in 1855 was possible only by escorting him down State Street to the revenue cutter in waiting, inside a dense hollow square of United States artillerymen and marines, with the whole city's militia under arms and at hand. Business houses as well as residences were closed and draped in mourning. It was an indignity which Massachusetts never forgot. At Alton, Ill., slave-hunters seized a respectable colored woman, long resident there, who fully believed herself free. She was surrounded by an infuriated company of citizens, and would have been wrenched from her captors' clutch had not they, in their terror, offered to sell her back into freedom. The needed $1,200 was raised in a few minutes, and the agonized creature restored to her family. Judge Davis, whom the evidence had compelled to deliver the woman, on rendering the sentence resigned his commission, declaring: "The law gives you your victim. Thank it and not me, and may God have mercy on your sinful souls."

CHAPTER V.

THE FIGHT FOR KANSAS

THE measures of 1850 proved anything but the "finality" upon slavery discussion which both parties, the Whigs as loudly as the Democrats, promised and insisted that they should be. Elated by its victory in 1850, and also by that of 1852, when the anti-slavery sentiment of northern Whigs drove so many of their old southern allies to vote for Pierce, giving him his triumphant election, the slavocracy in 1854 proceeded in its work of suicide to undo the sacred Missouri Compromise of 1820. Douglas, the ablest northern Democrat, led in this, succeeding, as official pacificator between North and South, somewhat to the office of Clay, who had died June 29, 1852. The aim of most who were with him was to make Kansas-Nebraska slave soil, but we may believe that Douglas himself cherished the hope and conviction that freedom was its destiny.

This rich country west and northwest of Missouri, consecrated to freedom by the Missouri Compromise, had been slowly filling with civilized men. It did not promise to be a profitable field for slavery, nor would economic considerations ever have originated a slavery question concern-

ing it. But politically its character as slave or free was of the utmost consequence to the South, where the resolution gradually arose either to secure it for the peculiar institution or else prevent its organization even as a Territory. A motion for such organization had been unsuccessfully made about 1843, and it was repeated, equally without effect, each session for ten years. None of these motions had contained any hint that slavery could possibly find place in the proposed territory. The bill of December 15, 1853, like its predecessors, had as first drawn no reference whatever to slavery, but when it returned from the committee on territories, of which Douglas was chairman, the report, not explicitly, indeed, made the assumption, unheard of before, that Kansas-Nebraska stood in the same relation to slavery in which Utah and New Mexico had stood in 1850, and that the compromise of that year, in leaving the question of slavery to the States to be formed from these Territories, had already set aside the agreement of 1820. These assumptions were totally false. The act of 1850 gave Utah and New Mexico no power as Territories over the debatable institution, and contained not the slightest suggestion of any rule in the matter for territories in general.

But the hint was taken, and on January 16th notice given of intention to move an out-and-out abrogation of the Missouri Compromise. Such abrogation was at once incorporated in the Kansas-Nebraska bill reported by Douglas, January 23, 1854. This separated Kansas from Nebraska, and the subsequent struggle raged in reference to Kan-

sas alone. The bill erroneously declared it established by the acts of 1850 that "all questions as to slavery in the Territories," no less than in the States which should grow out of them, were to be left to the residents, subject to appeal to the United States courts. It passed both houses by good majorities and was signed by President Pierce May 30th. Its animus appeared from the loss in the Senate of an amendment, moved by S. P. Chase, of Ohio, allowing the Territory to prohibit slavery.

Thus was first voiced by a public authority Judge Douglas's new and taking heresy of "squatter sovereignty," that Congress, though possessing by Article IV., Section iii., Clause 2 of the Constitution, general authority over the Territories, is not permitted to touch slavery there, but must leave it for each territorial populace "to vote up or vote down." At the South this doctrine of Douglas's was dubbed "non-intervention," and its real aim to secure Kansas a pro-slavery character avowed. It was consequently popular there as useful toward the repeal, although repudiated the instant its working bade fair to render Kansas free.

This was soon the prospect. Organizations had been formed to aid anti-slavery emigrants from the northern States to Kansas. The first was the Kansas Aid Society, another a Massachusetts corporation entitled the New England Emigrant Aid Society. There were others still. Kansas began to fill up with settlers of strong northern sympathies. They were in real minority at the congressional election of November, 1854, and in apparent minority at the territorial election the next March.

The vote against them on the last occasion, however, was largely deposited by Missourians who came across the border on election day, voted, and returned. This was demonstrated by the fact that there were but 2,905 legal voters in the Territory at the time, while 5,427 votes were cast for the pro-slavery candidates alone. These early successes gave the pro-slavery party and government in Kansas great vantage in the subsequent congressional contest. The first Legislature convened at Pawnee, July 2, 1855, enacted the slave laws of Missouri, and ordered that for two years all state officers should be appointed by legislative authority, and no man vote in the Territory who would not swear to support the fugitive slave law.

The free-state settlers, now a majority, ignored this Legislature and its acts, and at once set to work to secure Kansas admission to the Union as a State without slavery. The Topeka convention, October 23, 1855, formed the Topeka constitution, which was adopted December 14th, only forty-six votes being polled against it. This showed that pro-slavery men abstained from voting. January 15, 1856, an election was held under this constitution for state officers, a state legislature, and a representative in Congress. The House agreed, July 3d, by one majority, to admit Kansas with the Topeka constitution, but the Senate refused. The Topeka Legislature assembled July 4th, but was dispersed by United States troops.

This was done under command from Washington. President Pierce, backed by the Senate with its steady pro-slavery majority, was resolved at all

hazards to recognize the pro-slavery authorities of Kansas and no other, and, as it seemed, to force it to become a slave State; but fortunately the House had an anti-slavery majority which prevented this. The friends of freedom in Kansas had also on their side the history that was all this time making in Kansas itself. During the summer of 1856 that Territory was a theatre of constant war. Men were murdered, towns sacked. Both sides were guilty of violence, but the free-state party confessedly much the less so, having far the better cause. Nearly all admitted that this party was in the majority. Even the governors, all Democrats, appointed by Pierce, acknowledged this, some of them, to all appearance, being removed as a punishment for the admission. Governor Geary, in office from September, 1856, to March, 1857, and Governor Walker, in office from May, 1857, were just and able men, and their decisions, in most things favorable to the free-state cause, had much weight with the country.

Walker's influence in the Territory led the free-state men to take part in the territorial election of October, 1857, where they were entirely triumphant. But the old, pro-slavery Legislature had called a constitutional convention, which met at Lecompton, September, 1857, and passed the Lecompton constitution. This constitution sanctioned slavery and provided against its own submission to popular vote. It ordained that only its provision in favor of slavery should be so submitted. This pro-slavery clause was adopted, but only because the free-state men would not vote. The Topeka

Legislature submitted the whole constitution to popular vote, when it was overwhelmingly rejected. The President and Senate, however, urged statehood under the Lecompton constitution, although popular votes in Kansas twice more, April, 1858, and March, 1859, had adopted constitutions prohibiting slavery, the latter being that of Wyandotte. But the House still stood firm. Kansas was not admitted to the Union till January 29, 1861, when her chief foes in the United States Senate had seceded from the Union. She came in with the Wyandotte constitution and hence as a free State.

It was during the debate upon Kansas affairs in 1856 that Preston S. Brooks, a member of the House from South Carolina, made his cowardly attack upon Charles Sumner. Sumner had delivered a powerful speech upon the crime against Kansas, worded and delivered, naturally but unfortunately, with some asperity. In this speech he animadverted severely upon South Carolina and upon Senator Butler from that State. This gave offence to Brooks, a relative of Butler, and coming into the Senate Chamber while Sumner was busy writing at his desk, he fell upon him with a heavy cane, inflicting injuries from which Sumner never recovered, and which for four years unfitted him for his senatorial duties. Sumner's colleague, Henry Wilson, in an address to the Senate, characterized the assault as it deserved. He was challenged by Brooks, but refused to fight on the ground that duelling was part of the barbarism which Brooks had shown in caning Sumner. Anson Burlingame,

representative from Massachusetts, who had publicly denounced the caning, was challenged by Brooks and accepted the challenge, but, as he named Canada for the place of meeting, Brooks declined to fight him for the ostensible reason that the state of feeling in the North would endanger his life upon the journey. A vote to expel Brooks had a majority in the House, though not the necessary two-thirds. He resigned, but was at once reelected by his South Carolina constituency.

While the fierce Kansas controversy had been raging, the South had grown cold toward the Douglas doctrine of popular sovereignty, and had gradually adopted another view based upon Calhoun's teachings. This was to the effect that Congress, not under Article IV., Section iii., clause 2, but merely as the agent of national sovereignty, rightfully legislates for the Territories in all things, yet, in order to carry out the constitutional equality of the States in the Territories, is obliged to treat slaves found there precisely like any other property. If one citizen wishes to hold slaves, all the rest opposing, the general Government must support him. It is obvious how antagonistic this thought was to that of Douglas, since, according to the latter, a majority of the inhabitants in a Territory could elect to exclude slavery as well as to establish it.

The new southern or Calhoun theory assumed startling significance for the Nation when, in 1857, it was proclaimed in the Dred Scott decision of the United States Supreme Court as part of the innermost life of our Constitution. Dred Scott

was a slave of an army officer, who had taken him from Missouri first into Illinois, a free State, then into Wisconsin, covered by the Missouri Compromise, then back into Missouri. Here the slave learned that by decisions of the Missouri courts his life outside of Missouri constituted him free, and in 1848, having been whipped by his master, he prosecuted him for assault. The decision was in his favor, but was reversed when appeal was taken to the Missouri Supreme Court. Dred Scott was now sold to one Sandford, of New York. Him also he prosecuted for assault, but as he and Sandford belonged to different States this suit went to the United States Circuit Court. Sandford pleaded that this lacked jurisdiction, as the plaintiff was not a citizen of Missouri but a slave.

It was this last issue which made the case immortal. The Circuit Court having decided in the defendant's favor, the plaintiff took an appeal to the Supreme Court. Here the verdict was against the citizenship of the negro, and therefore against the jurisdiction of the court below. The upper court did not stop with this simple dictum, hard and dubious as it was, but proceeded to lay down as law an astounding course of pro-slavery reasoning. In this it confined the ordinance of 1787 to the old northwestern territory, declared the Missouri Compromise and all other legislation against slavery in Territories unconstitutional, and the slave character portable not only into all the Territories but into all the States as well, slavery having everywhere all presupposition in its favor and freedom being on the defensive. The denial

of Scott's citizenship was based solely upon his African descent, the inevitable implication being that no man of African blood could be an American citizen.

This decision rendered jubilant all friends of slavery, as also the ultra Abolitionists, but correspondingly disheartened the sober friends of human liberty. How, it was asked, is the cause of freedom to be advanced when the supreme law of the land, as interpreted by the highest tribunal existing for that purpose, virtually establishes slavery in New England itself, provided any slave-master wishes to come there with his troop? But anti-slavery men did not despair. Patriots had of course to obey the court till its opinion should be reversed, yet its opinion was at once repudiated as bad law. Men like Sumner, Wilson, Chase, Giddings, Seward, and Lincoln, appealing to both the history and the letter of the Constitution, and to the course of legislation and of judicial decisions on slavery even in the slave States, had been elaborating and demonstrating the counter theory, under which our fundamental law appeared as anything but a "covenant with hell."

The pith of this counter theory was that slaves were property not by moral, natural, or common law, but only by state law, that hence freedom, not slavery was the heart and universal presupposition of our government, and that slavery, not freedom, was bound to show reasons for its existence anywhere. This being so, while Calhoun and Taney were right as against Douglas in ascribing to Congress all power over the Territories, it was as im-

possible to find slaves in any United States Territory as to find a king there. Slaves taken into Territories therefore became free. Slaves taken into any free State became free. Slaves carried from a slave State on to the high seas became free. Even the fugitive slave clause of the Constitution must be applied in the way least favorable to slavery.

On the other hand Douglas was right in his view that citizens and not States were the partners in the Territories. As to the assertion of incompatibility between citizenship and African blood it would not stand historical examination a moment. If it was true that the framers of the Constitution did not consciously include colored persons in the "ourselves and our posterity" for whom they purposed the "Blessings of Liberty," neither did they consciously exclude, as is clear from the fact that nearly every one of them expected blacks some time to be free.

CHAPTER VI.

SLAVERY AND THE OLD PARTIES

THE Democratic Party was predominantly southern, the Whig northern. Both sought to be of national breadth, but the democratic with much the better success. Democracy would not give up its northern vote nor the Whigs their southern; but a better party fealty, due to a longer and prouder party history, rendered the Democrats far the more independent and bold in the treatment of their out-lying wing. The consequence was that while its rank and file at the North never loved slavery, they tolerated it and became its apologists in a way to make the party as a whole not only in appearance but in effect the pliant organ of the slavocracy. This status became more pronounced with the progress of the controversy and of the South's self-assertion. It was real under Jackson, rigid under Van Buren, manifest and almost avowed under Polk, Pierce, and Buchanan.

Whig temper toward slavery was throughout the North much better, but whig party action was little better. Fear of losing southern supporters permanently forbade all frank enlistment by the Whig Party for freedom. The mighty leaders, Adams, Webster, even Clay, were well inclined, and the

party, as such, was at the South persistently accused of alliance with the Abolitionists. This was untrue. Abolitionists, Liberal Party men, and Freesoilers oftener voted with Democrats than with Whigs. Clay complained once that Abolitionists denounced him as a slave-holder, slave-holders as an Abolitionist, while both voted for Van Buren. Compromise was the bane of this party as of the other; and each of the resplendent chieftains named at one time or another seemed so reverent to Belial that the record is painful reading.

When in 1841 the ship Creole sailed from Richmond with one hundred and thirty-five slaves on board bound for the southern market, and one Madison Washington, a recovered runaway on board, headed a dash upon captain and crew, got possession of the vessel and took her into New Providence, Clay was as loud as Calhoun or any southern senator in demanding of the English Government the return of these slaves to bondage or, at least, that of "the mutineers," as they were called. Webster, Secretary of State at the time, instructed Edward Everett, our English minister, to insist upon this, his arguments being sound and his tone emphatic enough to please Mr. Calhoun. This was the time when Giddings, of Ohio, brought into the House his resolutions to the effect that slavery was a state institution only, and that hence any slave carried on to the open ocean or to any other locality where only national law prevailed, was free. He was censured in the House by a large majority and resigned, but his Ohio constituency immediately re-elected him.

Up to this time Giddings and Adams were the only pronounced anti-slavery men in that body. Adams had acquiesced in the Missouri Compromise, but all his subsequent career, especially his course in the House of Representatives after 1830, is not only creditable to him so far as the slavery question is concerned, but registers him as one of the most influential opponents of slavery in our history. Refusing to be classed with the Abolitionists, he was, in effect, the most efficient Abolitionist of them all.

Previous to 1835, though petitions against slavery reached Congress in great numbers and nettled many members, they had been received and referred in the usual manner. But in February, 1836, the House created a special committee to consider these petitions. It reported a resolution, which passed under the previous question, that thereafter all papers of the kind should be tabled without printing or reference. Adams declared to the House: "I hold the resolution to be a direct violation of the Constitution of the United States, the rules of this House, and the rights of my constituents." In this rencounter Adams advanced the view on which the Emancipation Proclamation by and by proceeded, that slavery, even in States, was not beyond reach of the national arm, but would be at the mercy of Congress the instant slave-masters should rebel. This, the first of the gag laws, was, however, enacted. The second, or Patton gag, was passed on December 21, 1837, and the third, or Atherton gag, a year later. The principle of these, practically

cutting off all petitions to Congress respecting slavery, was taken up in the twenty-first rule of the House in 1840.

Mr. Adams was from the first the resolute and uncompromising foe of the gag policy. Wagon-loads of petitions came to him to offer, among them one for his own expulsion from the House and one to dissolve the Union, and he presented all. February 6, 1837, he inquired of Mr. Speaker whether or not it would be appropriate to offer a petition in his hand from slaves, whereupon the pro-slavery members flew at him like vampires. After much uproar, in which Adams gave as good as was sent him, he sarcastically reminded his already infuriated assailants that the petition was in favor of slavery, not against, and that he had emphatically not offered it, but only made an innocent inquiry of the Speaker about doing so, the proper answer to which was so far from obvious that the Speaker himself had signified his intention to take the sense of the House upon it. Regularly, year after year, Adams moved the abolition of the gag rule, was beaten as regularly, long as a matter of course, sometimes after heated debate in which he was always victor. But little by little the majority vote against him lessened. In 1842 the gag passed by but four votes, in 1843 it had a majority of three only, in 1844 his motion to strike it out was carried by a vote of one hundred and eight to eighty. Adams wrote that day in his diary: "Blessed, forever blessed be the name of God."

But a plenitude of Whigs, not all southern, voted for each of these gags. The worst one of all

was moved by a Whig. The XXVIIth Congress, strongly whig, voted to retain the gag, which it was left for the XXVIIIth, strongly democratic, finally to repeal. At the South, slavery more and more overbore party feeling. Said Dixon, a Kentucky Whig, in 1854, "Upon the question of slavery I know no Whiggery, no Democracy—I am a pro-slavery man." It should be added, however, that as the conflict progressed, pro-slavery Whigs became few save in the South, and that these nearly all soon turned Democrats.

Most humiliating was the vassalage to the slave power displayed by northern congressmen of both parties, though forming a majority in the House during all the great days of the slavery battle. The gag history is one example. Resolutions against unquestionably unconstitutional laws imprisoning northern seamen at southern ports simply because they were colored, were tabled in the House by a large majority. Slavery in the District of Columbia, where Congress had the right of "exclusive legislation in all cases whatsoever," so that the entire nation was responsible, defied every effort to abolish it till 1862, after the Civil War began. Nor was the trade there in aught alleviated till 1850, when some modification of it was possible as an element of the compromise described in the preceding chapter. An enlargement of Missouri, adding to the northwest corner of that State, as slave territory, a vast tract which the Missouri Compromise had forever devoted to freedom, being in truth a preliminary repeal of that pact, was carried without opposition.

The brutal and murderous lawlessness practised against Abolitionists was praised by northern congressmen often as slavery came up in debate. Even Senator Silas Wright, of New York, subsequently famous as a foe of slavery, in remarks upon the reference of anti-slavery petitions, boasted of the atrocities at Utica in 1835 and of others similar, as proof that "resistance to these dangerous and wicked agitators in the North had reached a point beyond law and above law." A bill, in 1836, for closing the mails to abolitionist literature, another defiance of the Constitution, Amendment I., secured engrossment in the Senate by the casting vote of Vice-President Van Buren; Wright, Tallmadge, and Buchanan also favoring; but failed to pass, nineteen to twenty-five, because Benton, Clay, and Crittenden had the patriotism to vote nay.

Discussion hereon laid bare the vital contradiction in our governmental system. Calhoun showed that the Constitution permits each State for itself to define, in order to inhibit, incendiary literature. Characteristically, he would have forced mail agents to obey state laws upon this matter. Yet for Congress to have so directed would plainly have been abridging freedom of the press.

Had the Whig Party, while in power from 1849 to 1853, been brave enough boldly to assume a rational anti-slavery attitude, though it might have been defeated, as it was in 1852, it would have had a future. The chance passed unimproved. The temporizing attitude of the party's then leaders and the known pro-slavery feeling of most of

its southern members—twelve Whigs voting in the House for the repeal of the Missouri Compromise—proved deadly to the organization, its faithful old battalions going over in the South to the Democrats, in the North to the Republicans.

Many Whigs took the latter course by a circuitous route. Ever since the alien and sedition laws, cry had been raised at intervals against the too easy attainment of citizenship by the unnumbered immigrants thronging to our shores, and agitation raised, more or less successful, to thrust forward "Nativism" or Americanism, with opposition to the Roman Catholic Church, as an issue in our politics. To such movements Whigs, as legatees of Federalism, were always more friendly than Democrats, which was partly a cause and partly a consequence of the affinity that naturalized citizens all along showed for the Democratic Party.

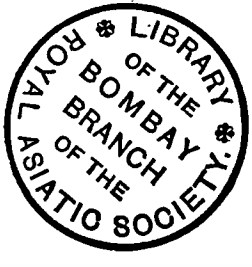
Americanism had its greatest run after 1850, when the Whigs saw their organization going to pieces, and, mistakenly in part, attributed democratic success to the immigrant vote. A secret fraternity arose, called the "Know-nothings," from "I don't know," the ever-repeated reply of its members to inquiry about its nature and doings. "America for Americans" was their cry, and they proposed to "put none but Americans on guard." At first pursuing their aims through silent manipulation of the old parties, by 1854 the Know-nothings swung out as a third party. From this date they lustily competed with the Republicans for the hosts of whig and democratic stragglers jostled from their old ranks by the omnibus bill

legislation, the Kansas-Nebraska act, and the "Crime against Kansas" committed by Pierce and his slavocratic Senate. In 1855 this party assumed national proportions, and worried seasoned politicians not a little; but having crystallized around no living issue, like that which nerved Republicanism, it fell like a rocket-stick, its sparks going over to make redder still republican fires. Henry Wilson became a Republican from the status of a Know-nothing; so did Banks, Colfax, and a score of others subsequently eminent among their new associates. Some had of old been Democrats, though most had been Whigs.

Notwithstanding many appearances to the contrary, the Democracy had begun to lose its hold upon the North from the moment of Polk's nomination in 1844. In that act it showed preference, on the score of availability, for a small man as presidential candidate. Harrison's election and Van Buren's defeat in 1840 doubtless had something to do with this. The same disposition was revealed in 1852, when Pierce was made candidate. What harmed the party still more was swerving from strict construction in declaring for the annexation of Texas, which in this case did not imply enlargement of view in reading the Constitution, but simply subserviency to the slave power. In this way Van Buren was alienated and the vote of New York lost in 1848, insuring defeat that year.

This particular breach was pretty well healed, but the evil survived. Then came the compromise repeal, wherein the Democracy stood by the

South in casting to the winds, the moment it promised to be of service to the North, a solemn bargain which had yielded the South Florida, Arkansas, and Missouri as slave States. Northern Democrats, especially in the rural parts, unwilling longer to serve slavery, drew off from the party in increasing numbers. Northern States one by one passed to the opposition. The whole of New England had gone over in 1856, also New York, Ohio, Michigan, Wisconsin, and Iowa—Buchanan having six votes outside those of Pennsylvania, where he won, as many believed, by unfair means. In 1860, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, California, Illinois, Indiana, Minnesota, and Oregon crossed to the same side.



CHAPTER VII.

THE CRISIS

THE repeal of the Missouri Compromise was politically a remarkable epoch. It not only consolidated old anti-slavery men, but cooled, to say the least, many "silver-gray," or conservative Whigs, as well as many "hards" and "hunkers" among the Democrats. But the slavocrats were blind to the risk they were running, and grew bolder than ever. There were now propositions for renewing the foreign slave-trade. Worse black laws were enacted. There was increased ferocity toward all who did not pronounce slavery a blessing, prouder domineering in politics, especially in Congress, and perpetual threat of secession in case the slave power should fail to have its way.

There were also plans for foreign conquest in slavery's behalf, which received countenance from public and even from national authorities. The idea seemed to be that the victory and territorial enlargement consequent upon the Mexican War might be repeated in Central America and Cuba. The efforts of Lopez in 1850 and 1851 to conquer Cuba with aid from the United States had indeed been brought to an end through this adventurer's execution in the latter year by the Cuban authori-

ties. Pierce put forth a proclamation in 1854, warning American citizens against like attempts in future. Defying this, the next year William Walker headed a filibustering expedition to the Pacific coast of Nicaragua, conquering the capital of that state and setting up a government which proceeded to re-establish slavery and invite immigration from the United States. Driven out by a coalition of other Central American states against him, Walker at once organized a new raid, and landed at Punta Arenas, Nicaragua, November 25, 1857; but he was seized by Commodore Paulding of our navy and brought to New York. He made a similar effort the next year, and another in 1860, when he captured Truxillo in Honduras, only to be soon overwhelmed, tried and shot.

If the Government at Washington was not openly implicated in any of these movements, no more, surely, did it heartily deprecate them. Fillmore's administration had in 1852 declined to enter into an alliance with Great Britain and France disclaiming intention to secure Cuba. In 1854, inspired by Pierce, our ministers at London, Paris, and Madrid, met at Ostend and put forth the "Ostend Manifesto." The tenor of this was that Spain would be better off without Cuba and we with it, and further, that, if Spain refused to sell, the United States ought as a means of self-preservation to take that island by force, lest it should become a second San Domingo. This proposition, like everything else relating to the great Repeal, was under umbrage in 1856; but in 1858 the southern Democrats in Congress brought in a bill to purchase

Cuba for $30,000,000, and the democratic platform of 1860 spoke for the acquisition thereof at the earliest practicable moment, by all "honorable and just means."

Thus an institution, barbarous, anti-democratic, sectional, an unmitigated curse even to its section, not so much as named in the Constitution, beginning with apology from all, by the zeal and unscrupulousness of advocates, the consolidation of political power at the South, and apathy, sycophancy, divided counsels, and commercial greed in the North, gradually amassed might, till, at the middle of Mr. Buchanan's term, every branch of the national Government was its tool, the Supreme Court included, enabling it authoritatively to mis-read the Constitution, declare the Union a pro-slavery compact, and act accordingly. But justice would not be mocked, and, though advancing upon halting foot, dealt the death-blow like lightning at last.

We have seen the feeble efforts of the old Liberty Party to make head against slavery, Birney and Earle being its candidates in 1840, Birney and Morris in 1844. In 1848 these "conscience free-soilers" were re-enforced by what have been called the "political free-soilers" of the State of New York, led by ex-President Van Buren. This astute organizer, aware that his defeat in the democratic convention of 1844 had resulted from southern and pro-slavery influences, led a bolt in the New York Democracy. His partisans in this were known as the "Barn-Burners," while the administration Democrats were called the "Hunkers." In the democratic convention of 1848 at Baltimore ap-

peared representatives of both factions, and both sets were admitted, each with half the state vote. This satisfied neither side. The Barn-Burners called a convention at Utica in June, and put Van Buren in nomination for the presidency. The Liberty Party men had the preceding year nominated Hale for this office, but now, seeing their opportunity, they called a new convention at Buffalo for August 9, 1848, to which all free-soilers were invited; and this convention made Van Buren and Charles Francis Adams its candidates for President and Vice-president. The platform declared against any further extension of slavery. The party was henceforth known as the "Free-Soilers," the name coming from its insistence that the territory conquered from Mexico should forever remain free. It steadfastly denounced slavery as a sin against God and a crime against man, and repudiated the compromise of 1850. It also laid special emphasis upon the wickedness of the new fugitive slave law, of which it demanded the repeal. By 1852 the regular Democracy in New York had won back a large proportion of the barn-burners or free-soil revolters, so that the free-soil prospect in this year was not encouraging. Only one hundred and forty-six thousand one hundred and forty-nine free-soil votes were polled in all the northern States.

What quickened this drooping movement into new and triumphant life was the revocation of the Missouri Compromise. This rallied to the free-soil standard nearly all the northern Whigs, many old Barn-Burners who since 1848 had returned to the

democratic fold, and vast numbers of other anti-Lecompton Democrats. Most of the Know-nothings throughout the North also joined it, while of course it had in all its anti-slavery measures the hearty co-operation, directly political or other, of the Abolitionists. The first national convention of this new party, fortunately styling itself "Republican," was in 1856. Whig doctrine early appeared in the party by the demand for protection, internal improvements, and a national banking system; in fact Republicanism may be said to have received nearly entire the whig mantle, as the Whigs did that of Federalism.

But the living soul and integrating idea of the party was new, the rigid confinement of slavery and the slave power to their narrowest constitutional limits. It denounced the repeal of the Missouri Compromise. In the election of this year, 1856, eleven States chose Republican electors, viz.: all New England, also New York, Ohio, Michigan, Iowa, and Wisconsin. Evidently the Democracy had at last found a foe at which it were best not to sneer. The Dred Scott decision immensely aided the growth of this new political power, as it was now quite generally believed in the North that the whole policy of the South was a greedy, selfish grasping for the extension of slavery.

Out of this conviction, apparently, grew the John Brown raid into Virginia in 1858. John Brown was an enthusiast, whom sufferings from the Border Ruffians in Kansas, where one of his sons had been atrociously murdered and another driven to insanity by cruel treatment as a prisoner, had fren-

zied in his opposition to slavery. He had dedicated himself to its extirpation. The intrepid old man formed the purpose of invading Virginia, and of placing himself with a few white allies at the head of a slave insurrection that should sweep the State. Friends in the North had contributed money for the purchase of arms, and on October 16th, Brown, with fourteen white men and four negroes, seized the United States Armory at Harper's Ferry. He stopped the railway trains, freed some slaves, and assumed to rule the town. United States troops were at once despatched to the scene, when the misguided hero, with his devoted band, fortified themselves in the engine house, surrendering only after thirteen of them, including two of Brown's sons, were killed or mortally wounded. Brown and the other survivors were soon tried, convicted, and hung. This insane attempt was deprecated by nearly all of all parties; but the fate of Brown, with his resolute bravery, begot him large sympathy, and the false assumption of the South that he really represented northern feeling made his deed helpful to the anti-slavery movement, of which the Republican Party was now the centre.

Notwithstanding all this the Democracy might still have elected a president in 1860 had it been united. But it was now desperately at feud with itself, the cause of this, beautifully enough, lying back in that very device of Repeal which was intended to make Kansas a slave State and so to perpetuate the democratic sway. Judge Douglas, and most of the northern Democrats with him, had

insisted so long and earnestly upon the doctrine of squatter sovereignty that they could not now possibly recede from it even had they desired to do so. The great majority of them did not so desire, but sincerely believed in that doctrine as part and parcel of the true democratic faith. But it was now obvious that the working out of the Douglas theory was absolutely sure to make free all the western States henceforth to be formed. This would, of course, remove the Senate from the domination of slavery. Hence the South was irrevocably opposed to it, and insisted with all its might upon the Calhoun-Taney contention that the national Government must protect slavery in all the Territories to which it pleased to go. In a passage at arms with Douglas as they were stumping Illinois for the senatorship in 1858, Lincoln keenly forced upon him the question whether under the Dred Scott decision any Territory could possibly be kept free from slavery. "If," said he, "Douglas answers yes, he can never be President; if no, Illinois will not again elect him senator." Douglas replied in the affirmative, and, as his antagonist prophesied, became in the South a doomed man.

The schism was fully apparent when, on April 23d, the democratic convention of 1860 began its session in Charleston. A majority of the delegates were for Douglas, voting down the Calhoun-Taney view, though willing that the party should bind itself to obey the Dred Scott decision. When the Douglas platform was adopted the delegations from Alabama, Mississippi, Florida, and Texas,

with parts of those from Louisiana, North and South Carolina, Arkansas, and Delaware, seceded. Douglas had a majority vote as presidential candidate, but not two-thirds. The convention adjourned to meet at Baltimore June 18th, and when it met there Douglas was nominated by the requisite two-thirds vote. The seceders met at Richmond, June 11th, where, imitating some new seceders at Baltimore, they nominated Breckenridge and Lane. The so-called Constitutional Union Party also had in the field its ticket, Bell and Everett, which secured votes from a few persistent Whigs and Know-nothings still foolish enough to suppose that further clash between the powers of slavery and freedom could somehow be averted.

The Republicans nominated Abraham Lincoln, of Illinois, and Hannibal Hamlin, of Maine. Lincoln was already a marked man in his party, especially in the West, his brilliant joint debate with Judge Douglas during some months in 1858 having brought out his matchless good sense and good nature, his rare knowledge of our history and law, and his high quality as thinker and speaker. Born in Kentucky in 1809, removing to Indiana in 1816, to Illinois in 1830, reared in extreme poverty and wholly self-educated, this man had risen by his wits, his sturdy perseverance and industry, his extraordinary ability, and his proverbial honesty, to be the acknowledged peer of the "Little Giant" himself. He began political life a Whig and ably represented that party in the national Congress from 1847 to 1849, making his voice heard against the highhanded procedure of the Administration

in the Mexican War. But as with Seward, Greeley, Fessenden, Thaddeus Stevens, Sherman, Dayton, Corwin, and Collamer, subsequent events had intensified his anti-slavery feeling, convincing him, as he avowed, that the Union could not "permanently continue half slave and half free." He was thus drawn to unite his fortunes with the Republicans. His nomination was received coolly in the East, where Seward had been preferred; but as men studied Lincoln's record they were convinced of the wisdom which had made him the party's leader. He swept New England, New York, New Jersey, Pennsylvania, Ohio, Indiana, Illinois, Michigan, Iowa, Wisconsin, California, Minnesota, and Oregon, having 180 electoral votes to Breckinridge's seventy-two, Bell's thirty-nine, and Douglas's twelve.

CHAPTER VIII.

MATERIAL PROGRESS

THE population of the United States in 1860 was 31,443,321. In spite of the threatening political complications between 1840 and 1860, these years were characterized by astonishing economic prosperity. The decade after 1848 was, indeed, in point of advance in material weal, the golden age of our history. Between 1850 and 1860, the wealth of the nation swelled one hundred and twenty per cent., the value of its farms one hundred and three per cent., its total manufacturing product eighty-seven per cent., its manufactured export one hundred and seventy-one per cent., its railroad mileage two hundred and twenty per cent. Making all due allowance for the rise of prices during the period, this is still a remarkable exhibit.

The great West continued to come under the hand of civilization. Between 1850 and 1860 our centre of population made a longer stride westward than during any other decade—from east of the meridian of Parkersburg, W. Va., to the meridian of Chillicothe, O. Florida and Texas having been admitted to statehood in 1845, Iowa followed next year, Wisconsin in 1848, California

in 1850, Minnesota, which had been an organized Territory since 1849, in 1858, and Oregon in 1859. Kansas, Nebraska, Utah, and Washington Territories were organized before 1860. By this date there were settlements far up the Rio Grande. The Pacific coast was sought for lands and homes as well as for gold. Fremont's expeditions in 1842, 1844, and 1848 had done much to show people the way thither. In 1853 the Government sent out four different parties to survey suitable routes for a Pacific railway, a work followed up by three other parties the next summer. The settlements in Oregon had, by 1845, in places become dense.

Immigration hither was unfortunately checked a little later by Indian hostilities, the gravest attacks being in 1847 and 1855. In the latter year Major Haller, leading an exploring party, was surrounded by the savages and cut off from food and water, only making his escape by a fight of two days against overwhelming odds. He and his party at last hewed their desperate way through, losing their entire outfit, besides one-fifth of their number. The whole territory was harassed by Indians on the war path, and General Wool had to be sent up from San Francisco to restore peace. This done, immigration was renewed. A thousand new inhabitants came to Oregon in 1852, and its northern half was organized as Washington Territory the following year. The Pacific Mail Steamship Company had been chartered in 1848, and four years earlier a newspaper started, the first in English on that coast. Its seat was Oregon City, its name the *Flumgudgeon Gazette.*

The old West prospered, notwithstanding the drain which it, in common with the East, experienced in favor of parts farther toward the setting sun. The first lake propeller was launched at Cleveland in 1847. The same year the *Tribune* was started in Chicago. In 1850 the city had its theatre and its board of trade. The Chicago streets began this year to be lighted with gas. The first bridge across the Mississippi was built in 1855 at Minneapolis; that at Rock Island, fifteen hundred and eighty-two feet long, in 1856. The Niagara suspension bridge was finished in 1855.

The increase of railways did not at once end the opening of canals. The Miami Canal, between Cincinnati and Toledo, two hundred and fifteen miles, begun in 1825, was finished in 1843, and the Wabash and Erie, between Evansville and Toledo, opened in 1851; but the Middlesex Canal in Massachusetts was, in 1853, abandoned and filled up from the loss of its business to railroads. In 1857 the Pennsylvania Railroad Company purchased from the State the canal and railway line from Philadelphia to Pittsburgh, and soon after extended the railway portion to cover the whole. A traveller from Boston to the West could get to Rochester by rail in 1841. Next year he could go on to Buffalo by the same means. In 1842, Augusta, Ga., was connected by rail with Atlanta, Savannah with Macon, and the Boston and Maine Railway finished to Berwick.

The first railway out of Chicago—it was the first in Illinois—was built in 1850, to Elgin. Chicago had no railway connection with the East till

two years later, when the Michigan Southern was opened. The Michigan Central was finished soon after the Southern, and the Rock Island before the end of the year. The Michigan Central had direct connection east across Canada to Niagara Falls by 1854. In 1856 the Burlington route reached the Mississippi and the Rock Island went on to Iowa City. This year witnessed the opening of the first railroad in California—from Sacramento to Folsom. In 1857 Chicago and St. Louis were joined by rails, as also the latter city with Baltimore, over the Parkersburg branch of the Baltimore and Ohio.

We now come to an improvement of which the preceding period knew nothing, the magnetic telegraph, introduced by Professor Morse in 1844. In this year Morse secured a congressional appropriation of $30,000 for a line from Washington to Baltimore. The wires were at first encased in tubes underground. In spite of the success of the project, further governmental patronage was refused, the Postmaster-General advising against it under the conviction that the invention could not become practically valuable. Morse appealed for aid from private capitalists. Ezra Cornell, of New York, soon opened a short line in Boston for exhibition, following this with a similar enterprise in New York City. The admission fee was twelve and a half cents. Few cared to pay even this trifle, so that the undertaking was hardly a success in either city.

Amos Kendall then engaged as Morse's agent, and by dint of great effort secured subscriptions

for a line from New York to Philadelphia, being obliged to sell the shares for one-half their face value. Incorporation was secured from the Maryland Legislature, under the first American charter for the telegraph business. The line was completed in 1845 to the Hudson opposite the upper end of Manhattan Island, and an effort made to insulate the wire and connect with the city along the bottom of the river. This failed, and for some time messages had to be taken over in boats. In 1846 the wire was carried on to Baltimore. In the same year Philadelphia and Pittsburgh were connected by telegraph, New York and Albany, New York and Boston, Boston and Buffalo. The first line in California was erected in 1853.

In 1850 Hiram Sibley embarked in the telegraph business. He bought the House patent, and next year organized the New York and Mississippi Valley Telegraph Company. By 1853 or 1854, some twenty companies had started, with a capital of $7,000,000—too many for good management or high profits. Accordingly, Sibley and Cornell united in buying them up, and thus formed, in 1856, the Western Union, which Sibley's energy extended all over the country east of the Rocky Mountains. In 1860 he went to Washington with a scheme for a transcontinental telegraph line, and secured from Congress a subsidy of $40,000 for ten years. Just then the Overland Telegraph Company was started in San Francisco. It and Sibley united, breaking ground July 1, 1861, and proceeding at the rate of nearly ten miles of wire per day. On October 25th, telegraph wire

stretched all the way between the two oceans. In 1864 this line was amalgamated with the Western Union.

Still more wonderful, ocean telegraphy was broached and made successful during these years. Tentative efforts to operate the current under water were made between Governor's Island and New York City so early as 1842. A copper wire was used, insulated with hemp string coated with India rubber and pitch. In 1846 a similar arrangement was encased in lead pipe. This device failed, and sub-aqueous telegraphy seems to have been for the time given up.

In 1854 Mr. Cyrus W. Field, of New York, with Peter Cooper and other capitalists of that city, organized the New York, Newfoundland, and London Telegraph Company, stock a million and a half dollars, and began plans to connect New York with St. Johns, Newfoundland, by a cable under the Gulf of St. Lawrence. Little progress was made, however, till 1857, when it was attempted to lay a cable across the Atlantic from Newfoundland. The paying out was begun at Queenstown and proceeded successfully until three hundred and thirty-five miles had been laid, when the cable parted. Nothing more was done till the next year in June. Then, in 1858, after several more unsuccessful efforts, the two continents were successfully joined. The two ships containing the cable met in mid-ocean, where it was spliced and the paying out begun in each direction. The one reached Newfoundland the same day, August 5th, on which the other reached Valencia, Ireland. No

break had occurred, and after the necessary arrangements had been effected, the first message was transmitted on August 16th. It was from the Queen of Great Britain to the President of the United States, and read, "Glory to God in the highest, peace on earth and good will to men." A monster celebration of the event was had in New York next day.

Although inter-continental communication had been actually opened, the cable did not work, nor did ocean cabling become a successful and regular business till 1866, when a new cable was laid. This event attracted the more attention from the fact that the largest ship ever built was used in paying out the cable. It was the Great Eastern, 680 feet long and eighty-three broad, with 25,000 tons displacement.

Street railways became common in our largest cities before 1860, the first in New England, that between Boston and Cambridge, dating from 1856. Sleeping-cars began to be used in 1858. The express business went on developing, being opened westward from Buffalo first in 1845. A steam fire-engine was tried in New York in 1841, but the invention was successful only in 1853. Baltimore used one in 1858. Goodyear triumphantly vulcanized rubber in 1844, making serviceable a gum which had been used in various forms already but without ability to stand heat. Elias Howe took out his first patent for a sewing machine in 1846, being kept in vigorous fight against infringements for the next eight years. The anæsthetic power of ether was discovered in 1844. Gutta-percha was

first imported hither in 1847. The first application of the Bessemer steel process in this country was made in New Jersey in 1856, the manufacture of watches by machinery begun in 1857, photolithography in 1859. New York had a clearing house in 1853, Boston in 1855. The petroleum business may with propriety be dated from 1860, although the existence of oil in Northwestern Pennsylvania had been long known, and some use made of it since 1826. For several years experiments had been making in refining the oil. The excellence of the light from it now drew attention to the value of the product, wells began to be bored and oil land sold for fabulous prices.

We close this chapter with a word about the painful financial crisis that swept over the country in the autumn of 1857. Its causes are somewhat occult, but two appear to have been the chief, viz., the over-rapid building of railroads and the speculation induced by the prosperity and the rise of prices incident to the new output of gold. Interest on the best securities rose to three, four, and five per cent. a month. On ordinary securities no money at all could be had. Commercial houses of the highest repute went down. The climax was in September and October. The three leading banks in Philadelphia suspended specie payments, at once followed in this by all the banks of the Middle States, and upon the 13th of the next month by the New York banks. Manufacturing was very largely abandoned for the time, at least thirty thousand operatives being thrown out of work in

New York City alone. Prices even of agricultural produce fell enormously. Tramps were to be met on every road. Easier times fortunately returned by spring, when business resumed pretty nearly its former prosperous march.

PERIOD IV.

CIVIL WAR AND RECONSTRUCTION

1860–1868

CHAPTER I.

CAUSES OF THE WAR

It were a mistake to refer the great Rebellion, for ultimate source, to ambiguity in the Constitution or to the wickedness of politicians or of the people. It was simply the last resort in an "irrepressible conflict" of principle—in the struggle for and against the genius of the world's advance. Economic, social, and moral evolution, resulting in two radically different civilizations, had enforced upon each section unfaithfulness to the spirit and even to the letter of its constitutional covenant. The South was not to blame that slavery was at first profitable; and if it deemed it so too long and even thought of it as a good morally, these convictions, however big with ill consequences to the nation, were but errors of view, not strange considering the then status of slavery in the world.

The South's pride, holding it to the course once chosen, was also no indictable offence. Nor could the North on its part be taxed with crime for its "higher law fanaticism," which was simply the

spirit of the age; or for seeing early what all believe now, that slavery was a blight upon the land. Much as was "nominated in the bond" of the Constitution, neither law nor equity forbade free States to increase the more rapidly in numbers, wealth, and other elements of prosperity; and northern congressmen must have been other than human, if, seeing this increase and being in the majority, they had gone on punctiliously heeding formal obligation against manifest national weal. And when, in 1854, the great sacred compact of 1820 was set aside by the authority of the South itself, the North felt free even from formal fetters. All talk of extra-legal negotiations and understandings touching slavery was now at an end. The northern majority was at last united to legislate upon slavery as it would, subject only to the Constitution. The South too late saw this, and fearing that the peculiar institution, shut up to its old home, would die, sought separation, with such chance of expansion as this might yield.

The South had come to love slavery too well, the Constitution too little. Upon conserving slavery all parties there, however dissident as to modes, however hostile in other matters, were unconditionally bent. The chief argument even of those opposing disunion was that it endangered slavery. Our new government, said Alexander H. Stephens, soon to be vice-president of the Southern Confederacy, is founded, its corner-stone rests, upon the great physical, philosophical, and moral truth, to which Jefferson and the men of his day were blind, that the negro, by nature or the curse

of Canaan, is not equal to the white man; that slavery, subordination to the superior race, is, by ordination of Providence, whose wisdom it is not for us to inquire into or question, his natural and normal condition. As the apostle of such a principle the South could not but abjure the old establishment, whose genius and working were inevitably in the contrary direction. Many confessed it to be the essential nature of our Government, and not unfair treatment under it, against which they rebelled.

Slavery had also bred hatred of the Union indirectly, by fostering anti-democratic habits of thought, feeling, and action. "The form of liberty existed, the press seemed to be free, the deliberations of legislative bodies were tumultuous, and every man boasted of his independence. But the spirit of true liberty, tolerance of the minority and respect for individual opinion, had departed, and those deceitful appearances concealed the despotism of an inexorable master, slavery, before whom the most powerful of slave-holders was himself but a slave, as abject as the meanest." Over wide sections, untitled manorial lords, "more intelligent than educated, brave but irascible, proud but overbearing," controlled all voting and office-holding. Congressional districts were their pocket-boroughs, and they ignored the common man save to use him. The system grew, instead of statesmen, sectionalists, whom love for the "peculiar institution" rendered callous to national interests.

The vigorous secession movements in the South at once after Lincoln's election, raised a question

of the first magnitude, which few people at the North had reflected upon since 1833, viz., whether or not non-revolutionary secession was possible. Almost unanimously the North denied such possibility, the South affirmed it. This was at bottom manifestly nothing but the old question of state sovereignty over again. The South held the Union to be a state compact, which the northern parties thereto had broken. To prove the compact theory no new proof was now adduced. Rather did the southern people take the assertion of it as an axiom, with a simplicity which spoke volumes for the influence of Calhoun and for the indoctrination which the South had received in 1832.

Not alone Calhoun but nearly every other southerner of great influence, at least from the day of the Missouri Compromise, had been inculcating the supreme authority of the State as compared with the Union. The southern States were all large, and, as travelling in or between them was difficult and little common, they retained far more than those at the North each its original separateness and peculiarities. Southern population was more fixed than northern; southern state traditions were held in far the deeper reverence. In a word, the colonial condition of things to a great extent persisted in the South down to the very days of the war. There was every reason why Alabama or North Carolina should, more than Connecticut, feel like a separate nation.

This intense state consciousness might gradually have subsided but for the deep prejudices and

passions begotten of slavery and of the opposition it encountered from the North. Their resolution against emancipation led southerners to cherish a view which made it seem possible for them as a last resort to sever their alliance with the North. It was this conjunction of influences, linking the slave-holder's jealousy and pride to a false but natural conception of state sovereignty, which created in southern men that love of State, intense and sincere as real patriotism, causing them to look upon northern men, with their different theory, as foes and foreigners.

A very imposing historical argument could of course have been built up for the Calhoun theory of the Union. The Union emerged from the preceding Confederacy without a shock. Most who voted for it were unaware how radical a change it embodied. The Constitution, one may even admit, could not have been adopted had it then been understood to preclude the possibility of secession. Doubtless, too, the gradual change of view concerning it all over the North, sprung from the multiplication of social and economic ties between sections and States, rather than from study of constitutional law. We believe that the untruth of the central-sovereignty theory in no wise follows from these admissions, and that its correctness might be made apparent from a plenitude of considerations.

Champions of the northern side deemed it the less necessary to expatiate upon this question, since, admitting the South's basal contention, the right in question depended upon sufficiency of grievance. As, in the South's view, the case was

one of sovereigns one party of whom, without referee, was about to break a compact without the other's consent, the adequacy of the grievance should, to excuse the step, have been absolutely beyond question. On the contrary it was subject to the gravest question.

The South's only significant indictment against the North was the one concerning the personal-liberty laws. Moderates like Stephens, indeed, stoutly condemned this plea for secession as insufficient; but, believing in the State as sovereign, they had perforce to yield, and they became as enthusiastic as any when once this "paramount authority" had spoken. "Fire-eaters," at first a small minority, saw this advantage and worked it to the utmost. On its complaint touching the personal liberty legislation the South's case utterly broke down, theorizing the Union into a rope of sand, not "more perfect" but far less so than the old, which itself was to be "perpetual." According to the Calhoun contention States were the parties to a pact, and it was a good way from clear that any northern State as such, even by personal liberty legislation, had broken the alleged pact. The liberty laws were innocent at least in form, and at worst had never been endorsed in any state convention. Buchanan himself testified that the fugitive slave law had been faithfully executed, and its operation is well known never to have been resisted by any public authority.

It was suspicious that no State ventured upon secession alone. It was equally remarkable that the Gulf States were the readiest to go, and made

most of the personal liberty laws as their pretext, accounting this cry, as was ingenuously confessed, a necessary means for holding the border States solidly to the southern cause. Weak enough, indeed, was the complaint of "consolidationist" aggression, of which certainly no party to the so-called pact was or could have been guilty. But the deeps of folly were sounded when northern "persecution" of the South was mentioned, or Lincoln's election as threat of such. This was simply the election as President, in a perfectly constitutional way, of a citizen, honest and unambitious, who was pledged against touching slavery in States. Having become President, he was unable to procure minister, law, treaty, or even adequate guard for his own person save by the consent of the party hitherto in power. Lincoln had failed of a popular majority by a million. Both Houses of Congress were against him at the time of his election, and, but for the absence of southern members, they would, it is likely, have continued so through his entire term. It was the South's bad logic on these points which gave the war Democrats their excellent plea for drawing sword on the northern side.

But even supposing secession technically justifiable, how strange that it should have been judged rational, prudent, or in the long run best for the South itself. Could aught but frenzy have so drowned in Americans the memories of our great past; or launched them upon a course that must have ended by Mexicanizing this nation, wresting from it the lead in freedom's march and crushing

out, in the breast of struggling patriotism the world over, all hope of government by and for the people! The South ought at least to have spared itself. Either its alleged horror at the advance of central-sovereignty sentiment at the North was sheer pretence, or it should have been certain that this section would not hesitate, as Buchanan so illogically did, to coerce rebellious state-bodies. If the North believed the totality of the nation to be the "paramount authority," Lincoln would surely imitate Jackson instead of Buchanan, and in doing so he would not seek military support in vain.

Quite as sure, too, must the final result have appeared from the census of 1850, had people been calm enough to read this. By that census the free States had a population fifty per cent. above the population of the slave states, slaves included, and the disparity was rapidly increasing. Their wealth was even more preponderant, being, slaves apart, nearly one hundred per cent. the larger. Their merchant tonnage was five times the greater—even young inland Ohio out-doing old South Carolina in this, and the one district of New York City the whole South. The North had three or four times the South's miles of railway, all the sinews of war without importation, and mechanics unnumbered and of every sort. And while champions of the Union would fight with all the prestige of law, national history and the *status quo* on their side, Europe's aid to the South, even that of the border slave States, was more than problematical, as was a successful career for the

Confederacy in case its independence should chance to be won. Events proved that the very defence of slavery had best prospect in the Union, and it seems as if this might have been foreseen by all, as it actually was by some.

CHAPTER II.

SECESSION

SECESSION was no new thought at the South. It lurked darkly behind the Kentucky and Virginia resolutions of 1798–99. It was brought out into broad daylight by South Carolina in the nullification troubles of 1832. "Texas or disunion!" was the cry at the South in 1843–44. In 1850 South Carolina declared herself ready to secede in the event of legislation hostile to slavery. Two years later the same State solemnly affirmed that it had a right to secede, but that, out of deference to the wishes of the other slave States, it forbore to exercise such right.

It must be admitted that in early years the North had helped to make the thought of secession familiar. In 1803, in view of the great increase of southern territory by the Louisiana Purchase, and again in 1813, when New England opposition to the war with England culminated in the Hartford Convention, there had been talk of a separate northern confederacy. But from that time on the thought of disunion died out at the North, while the South dallied with it more and more boldly. During the presidential campaign of 1856, threats were made that if Fremont, the

republican candidate, should be elected, the South would leave the Union. In October of that year a secret convention of southern governors was held at Raleigh, N. C., supposed to have been for the purpose of considering such a contingency. Governor Wise, of Virginia, who called the convention, afterward proclaimed that had Fremont been chosen he would have marched to Washington at the head of twenty thousand troops, seized the Capitol, and prevented the inauguration. This threatening attitude in 1856 may have been chiefly an electioneering device; but during the next four years the gulf between North and South widened rapidly, and the southern leaders turned more and more resolutely toward secession as the remedy for their alleged wrongs.

No sooner had the presidential campaign of 1860 begun than deep mutterings foretold the coming storm. "Elect Lincoln, and the South will secede!" cried the campaign orators of the South, while the halls of Congress rang with threats similar in tenor. As the campaign went on and republican success became probable, the southern leaders began to nerve up their hosts for the conflict. In October the governor and congressmen of South Carolina, with other prominent politicians, met and unanimously resolved that if Lincoln should win, the Palmetto State ought to renounce the Union. Similar meetings were held in Georgia, Alabama, Mississippi, and Florida. Governor Gist sent a confidential circular to the governors of all the cotton States declaring that South Carolina would secede with any other State, or would

make the plunge alone if others would promise to follow. The governors of Florida, Alabama, and Mississippi replied that their States would certainly do this. Georgia proposed to wait for some overt act by the National Government. North Carolina and Louisiana, it was learned, would probably not go out at all.

But the enthusiasts in South Carolina had got all the encouragement they wanted, and bided their time. Their time was at hand. The presidential election fell on November 6th. Next day the tidings flashed over the land that Abraham Lincoln had been elected President by the vote of a solid North against a solid South. The wires had scarcely ceased to thrill with this message of death to slavery-extension, when South Carolina sounded a trumpet-call to the South. Her Legislature ordered a secession state convention to meet in December, issued a call for ten thousand volunteers, and voted money for the purchase of arms. Federal office-holders resigned. Judge Magrath, of the United States District Court, laid aside his robes, declaring, "So far as I am concerned, the temple of Justice raised under the Constitution of the United States is now closed." Militia organized throughout the State. The streets of Charleston echoed nightly with the tramp of drilling minute-men. Secession orators harangued enthusiastic crowds. Hardly a coat but bore a secession cockade. November 17th, the Palmetto flag was unfurled in Charleston. It was a gala day. Cannon roared, bands played the Marseillaise, and processions paraded the streets bearing such mot-

toes as "Let's Bury the Union's Dead Carcass!" "Death to All Abolitionists!" The whole South was beside itself with excitement. One State after another assembled its convention to decide the question of secession. Even the Georgia Legislature, within a week after the election of Lincoln, voted $1,000,000 to arm the State.

The South Carolina convention met at Charleston, and on December 20th unanimously adopted an ordinance declaring: "The union now subsisting between South Carolina and other States, under the name of the United States of America, is hereby dissolved." This action was hailed with wildest enthusiasm. Huge placards—"The Union is Dissolved!"—were posted throughout the city, while the clang of bells and the boom of cannon notified the country round. The sidewalks were thronged with ladies wearing secession bonnets made of cotton with palmetto decorations. A party of gentlemen visited the tomb of Calhoun, and there registered their vows to defend the southern cause with their fortunes and lives. In the evening the convention marched to the hall in procession, and formally signed the revolutionary ordinance. The chairman then solemnly proclaimed South Carolina an "independent commonwealth." The little State, whose white population was less than 300,000, began to play at being a nation. The governor was authorized to appoint a cabinet and receive foreign ambassadors, and the papers put information from other parts of the country under the head of "foreign news."

The secession of South Carolina was greeted with joy in most of the other slave States. Montgomery and Mobile, Ala., each fired one hundred guns. At Richmond, Va., a palmetto banner was unfurled, while bells, bonfires, and processions celebrated the event all over the South. The other cotton States, spurred on by the bold deed of South Carolina, rapidly followed her lead. Mississippi seceded January 9th, Florida the 10th, Alabama the 11th, Georgia the 19th, Louisiana the 26th, Texas February 1.

It is probable that only in South Carolina, Mississippi, and Florida were the majority of whites in favor of secession. The South was after all full of Union sentiment. The ordinance of secession proceeded in each State from a convention, and the election of delegates to this witnessed the earnest work. The noble efforts of those Union men in their fierce struggle have never yet been appreciated. But they fought against great odds, and were inevitably overborne. The opposition was organized, ably led, and white-hot with zeal. The political power and the wealth of the South lay in the hands of the secessionists. The clergy threw their weight on that side, preaching that slavery, God's ordinance, was in danger. Union proclivities were crushed out by force. Vigilance committees were everywhere on the alert. In the rougher States of the Southwest abolitionists were tarred and feathered. Some were shot. In all the States Union men were warned to keep quiet or leave the South. One of the most powerful agents of intimidation was the Knights of the

Golden Circle, a vast secret society which extended throughout the southern States.

Yet, in spite of all, the vote was close even in several of the cotton States. The Georgia people wanted new safeguards for slavery, but did not at first desire secession. Alexander H. Stephens, who headed the anti-secession movement, declared that Georgia was won over to take the fatal step at last only by the cry, "Better terms can be made out of the Union than in it." Even then the first vote for secession stood only 165 to 130. In Louisiana the popular vote for convention delegates was 20,000 for secession and 17,000 against.

The border States held aloof. Kentucky and Tennessee refused to call conventions. So, for long, did North Carolina. The convention of Virginia and of Missouri each had a majority of Union delegates. When the Confederate Government was organized in February, only seven of the fifteen slave States had seceded. Their white population was about twenty-six hundred thousand, or less than half that of the entire slave region. But Arkansas and North Carolina were soon swept along by the current, and seceded in May. Virginia and Tennessee were finally carried (the former in May, the latter in June) by the aid of troops, who swarmed in from the seceded States, and turned the elections into a farce. Unionists in the Virginia Convention were given the choice to vote secession, leave, or be hanged. Missouri, Kentucky, Delaware, and Maryland resisted all attempts to drag them into the Confederacy, though the first two, after the United States be-

gan to apply force, appeared neutral rather than loyal.

The seizure of United States property went hand in hand with secession. Most of the government works were feebly garrisoned, and made no resistance. By January 15th the secessionists had possession of arsenals at Augusta, Ga., Mount Vernon, Ala., Fayetteville, N. C., Chattahoochee, Fla., and Baton Rouge, La., of forts in Alabama and Georgia, of a navy-yard at Pensacola, Fla., and of Forts Jackson and St. Philip, commanding the mouth of the Mississippi. At one arsenal they found 150,000 pounds of powder, at another 22,000 muskets and rifles, besides ammunition and cannon, at another 50,000 small arms and twenty heavy guns. The whole South had been well supplied with military stores by the enterprising foresight of J. B. Floyd, of Virginia, Buchanan's Secretary of War, who had sent thither 115,000 muskets from the Springfield arsenal alone.

Fort Moultrie, in Charleston harbor, was held by Major Robert Anderson, of Kentucky, with a garrison of some seventy men. On December 27th the whole country was thrilled, and the South enraged, by the news that on the previous night Anderson had secretly transferred his whole force to Fort Sumter, a new and stronger work in the centre of the harbor, leaving spiked cannon and burning gun-carriages behind him at Moultrie. The South Carolina militia at once occupied the deserted fortress with the other harbor fortifications, and began to put them into a state of defence. At Pensacola, Fla., Lieutenant Slemmer,

by a movement similar to Anderson's, held Fort Pickens.

The seizure of government property went on through January and February. In Louisiana all the commissary stores were confiscated, and the revenue cutter McClelland surrendered. The mint at New Orleans, containing over half a million in gold and silver, was seized. More than half of the regular army were stationed in Texas, under General Twiggs. In February, at the demand of a secessionist committee of public safety, he surrendered his entire force, together with eighteen military posts. The troops were sent to a Gulf port and there detained.

This wholesale seizure of government property, worth some $20,000,000, has brought down upon the South much scathing rebuke. The conduct of Floyd, stabbing his country under the cloak of a cabinet office, cannot be too strongly condemned; but with the seceding States the case was different. Having (so they thought) established themselves as independent republics, they could not allow the military works within their borders to remain in the hands of a foreign power. As to the Government's property right, they recognized it, and proposed to pay damages. The provisional constitution of the Confederacy, adopted in February, provided for negotiations to settle the claim of the United States.

The southern leaders were not more anxious to get the slave States out of the Union than to get them into a grand Southern Confederacy. Early in January a caucus of secession congressmen was

held at Washington, and arrangements made for a constitutional convention.

February 4, 1861, delegates from the States which had left the Union met at Montgomery, Ala., and formed themselves into a provisional Congress. A temporary government, styled "The Confederate States of America," was soon organized. Jefferson Davis, of Mississippi, was chosen President by the Congress, and Alexander H. Stephens, of Georgia, Vice-President. Davis was born in Kentucky in 1808. He graduated at West Point, fought as colonel in the Mexican war, served three terms as congressman from Mississippi, the last two in the Senate, and was Secretary of War under Pierce. After Calhoun's death, in 1850, he became the most prominent of the ultra southern leaders. The new President was brought from Jackson, Miss., to Montgomery by a special train, his progress a continual ovation. Cheering crowds gathered at every station to see and hear him. February 18th Davis was inaugurated. In his address, which was calm and moderate in tone, he declared that re-union was now "neither practicable nor desirable;" he hoped for peace, but said that if the North refused this, the South must appeal to arms, secure in the blessing of God on a just cause.

The confederate President was intrusted with very large powers, including supreme control of military affairs. He was authorized to muster into the service of the central government the regiments which had been forming in the various States. A call was issued for 100,000 volunteers,

and provision made for organizing a regular army. President Davis appointed a cabinet, with state, treasury, war, navy, and post-office departments. Robert Toombs, of Georgia, a rabid secessionist, became Secretary of State.

March 11th the confederate Congress adopted a permanent constitution. It reproduced that of the United States, with some important changes. State sovereignty was recognized in the preamble, which read, "We, the people of the Confederate States, each State acting in its sovereign and independent character," etc. Slavery was called by name, and elaborate safeguards fixed for it in the States and territories. Slave trade from beyond the sea, or with states not in the Confederacy, was, however, prohibited. Protective tariffs were absolutely forbidden. The president and vice-president were to serve six years, and the former could not be re-elected. Some valuable features were inserted. Members of the cabinet might discuss matters pertaining to their departments in either house of congress. The president could veto one part of an appropriation bill without killing the whole, and was required to lay before the senate his reasons for the removal of any officers from the civil service.

By the last of April all the seceded States had ratified this constitution. The other slave States were taken in as fast as they withdrew from the Union. The Southern Confederacy, now fairly launched, set sail over strange seas upon its short but eventful voyage. At the start the hopes of those it bore rose high. Few believed that the

North would dare draw sword. Even if it should, the southern heart, proud and brave, felt sure of victory. King Cotton would win Europe to their side. Peace would come soon. Visions of a glorious future dazzled the imaginative mind of the South. A vast slave empire, founded on the "great physical, philosophical, and moral truth" that slavery is the "natural condition" of the inferior black race, would spread encircling arms around the Great Gulf, swallowing up the feeble states of Mexico, and rise to a wealth and glory unparalleled in the history of nations.

CHAPTER III.

THE NORTH IN THE WINTER OF 1860–61

At the beginning of the secession movement the North slumbered and slept. Even South Carolina's withdrawal from the Union caused little alarm. "She will be glad enough to come back before long," prophesied many. As the revolution progressed there was a gradual awakening, but division of opinion paralyzed action. Ultra Abolitionists, with a few others, urged that the South be let go in peace. Most Republicans favored the preservation of the Union by force of arms if necessary; but nearly all Democrats, with many Republicans, wished for compromise. Of the latter class a few prayed the prodigals to return on their own terms. More proposed a rigid enforcement of the fugitive slave law, the repeal of personal liberty legislation, and acquiescence in the Dred Scott decision, with all future like decrees of the Supreme Court. This may be called the northern-democratic position. The most pronounced Republicans, as Seward and Stanton, would gladly have voted to re-enforce the Constitution's guarantee to slavery in the slave States.

Throughout the North the feeling was strong against all efforts at coercion. Most democratic

papers and many republican ones insisted loudly that use of arms was not to be mentioned, and that the South must be conciliated. A democratic convention met at Albany in January, to protest against forcible measures. The sentiment that if force were to be used it should be "inaugurated at home," here evoked hearty response. There were signs of even a deeper disaffection. An ex-governor of New Jersey declared that his State would join the Confederacy. Mayor Wood, of New York, proposed that if the Union were broken up, his city should announce herself an independent republic.

At Washington matters were still worse. President Buchanan, loyal but weak, feared to lift a finger. In his December message to Congress, he insisted that a State had no right to secede, but that the United States had no power to coerce a State which should secede. A majority of his cabinet were southern men, three of them zealous secessionists. His most intimate friends in Congress were southerners. These surrounded the vacillating Chief Magistrate, and paralyzed what little energy was in him, meanwhile taking advantage of his inaction to launch the Confederacy. Now and then, spurred on by loyal old General Scott and by the Union members of his cabinet, the President tried to break away from the toils which the conspirators had spun around him. The Star of the West was secretly sent with supplies and recruits to re-enforce Fort Sumter. But Secretary Thompson warned South Carolina, and when the vessel arrived off Charleston, January

9th, hostile batteries fired upon her and forced her out to sea again. Another plan to relieve the fort was half formed, but came to nothing. Buchanan's term was on the point of expiring, and he sat supinely looking on while the disruption of the Union proceeded apace.

The northern side in Congress showed little wisdom or spirit. Most northern congressmen truckled to the South or wasted their energies in fruitless attempts at compromise. Both houses, each by more than a two-thirds majority, recommended a constitutional amendment depriving Congress forever of the power to touch slavery in any State without the consent of all the States. In December the venerable Crittenden, of Kentucky, laid before the Senate his famous Suggestions for Compromise. These, besides embodying the above amendment, restored the Missouri Compromise, let each new State decide for itself whether it would be slave or free, and forbade Congress to abolish slavery in the District of Columbia or interfere with the inter-state transportation of slaves. The United States was to pay for all fugitives whose capture should be successfully prevented, and slaves as slaves could be carried through free States. This measure, before Congress all winter, was finally lost only for lack of southern votes.

A peace congress, called by Virginia, met at Washington in February. Most of the northern States were represented and all the southern which had not seceded. It sat for three weeks, and adopted resolutions identical in substance with the Crittenden Compromise. These dangerously

large offers of concession, mainly well meant, happily proved useless. The South had gone too far. She did not want compromise, but was bent upon setting up a slave empire.

Mr. Lincoln arrived safely in Washington on February 23d, having eluded a rumored plot to assassinate him in Baltimore. He accomplished this by assuming a slight disguise and taking an earlier train than the one in which he had been announced to go. He was duly inaugurated on March 4th. In his inaugural he disclaimed all purpose to interfere with slavery in the slave States, yet denied the right of secession, and proposed to regain and hold the property and places belonging to the United States in all parts thereof. There would be no bloodshed, he said, unless it were forced upon the Government. "In your hands, my dissatisfied fellow-countrymen," so ran his memorable words, "in your hands, not in mine, is the momentous issue of civil war. You can have no conflict without being yourselves the aggressors. We are not enemies, but friends." This message, held out as an olive branch, the South denounced as a menace. Some northern papers condemned it as the "knell and requiem of the Union." But the general feeling it evoked at the North was one of rejoicing. People believed that a hand both moderate and firm had at length seized the helm.

The new President stood faced by an herculean task. Congress was not yet fully purged of traitors, while Washington still swarmed with their friends and agents. Floyd's treachery had tied Lincoln's

hands. All the best munitions of war had been sent south. Of the rifled cannon belonging to the United States not one was left. Only a handful of regular troops were within call, and the resignations of their officers came in daily. The plight of the navy and treasury was no better. Amazing coolness and the absurd prejudice against coercing States largely possessed even the loyal masses. The attack on Sumter was thus a god-send.

April 8th, Governor Pickens received notice from President Lincoln that an attempt would be made to provision that fort. Thereupon General Beauregard, who had left the United States army to take charge of the fortifications at Charleston, was ordered by President Davis to demand its evacuation. Major Anderson replied that they should be starved out by the 15th, and would leave the fort then unless his Government sent supplies. This answer was held unsatisfactory, and at 3.20 on the morning of April 12th Beauregard notified Anderson that his batteries would open fire in one hour.

Fort Sumter stood on an artificial island at the entrance of the harbor. It was pentagonal in shape, the walls of brick, eight feet thick and forty feet high. The parapet was pierced for one hundred and forty guns, but only forty-eight were in condition for use. The garrison, including some forty workmen and a band, numbered one hundred and twenty-eight. Surrounding the fort on all sides except toward the sea, and distant from thirteen hundred to twenty-five hundred yards, nineteen Confederate batteries were in position, mounting forty-seven cannon and mortars, and

manned by three or four thousand volunteers. These works were provided with bomb-proofs made of railroad iron or of palmetto logs and sand.

The wharves, roofs, and steeples of Charleston were black with expectant crowds, straining their eyes down the harbor where the silent castle loomed up through the dim morning light. Boom! From a mortar battery to the south a bombshell rises high into the air, describes its graceful trajectory and falls within Sumter's enclosure. It is the signal gun. One battery after another responds, until in less than an hour the stronghold is girt by an almost continuous circle of flashing artillery. Shells scream through the air and explode above the doomed work, and great cannon-balls bury themselves in the brick walls. Still Sumter speaks not. Anderson is waiting for daylight. About six o'clock he breakfasts his garrison on pork and water, the only provisions left. An hour later the embrasures are opened, the black guns run out, and Sumter hurls back her answer to the voice of rebellion. The bombs making it unsafe to use the barbette cannons of the open rampart, Anderson was confined to his twenty-one casemate pieces, mostly of light calibre. The fire was kept up briskly all the morning. Sumter stood it well, but did little damage to the opposing batteries. At sunset the guns of both sides became silent, but the mortars maintained a slow fire through the night.

Early next morning the cannonade opened afresh, and in the course of the forenoon hot shot set fire to Sumter's wooden barracks. The flames

soon got beyond control; the powder magazine had to be closed; and the heat and smoke became so stifling that the garrison was forced, in order to avoid suffocation, to lie face downward upon the floor, each man with a wet cloth at his mouth. Powder was at last exhausted. About one o'clock the flag was shot away. It was immediately raised again upon a low jury-mast, but could not be seen for the smoke, and Beauregard sent to ask if Anderson had surrendered. The latter offered to evacuate upon the terms named before the bombardment, to which Beauregard agreed, and all firing ceased. The next day at noon, after a salute of fifty guns to their flag, Major Anderson and his men evacuated the scene of their heroism, and soon after took passage for New York.

The disunion leaders had rightly calculated that an open blow would bring the border slave States into the Confederacy; but they had not anticipated the effect of such a deed beyond Mason and Dixon's line. When it was known that the old flag had been fired upon, a thrill of passionate rage electrified the North from Maine to Oregon. Then was witnessed an uprising unparalleled in our history if not in that of mankind. From every city, town, and hamlet, loud and earnest came the call, "The Union must be preserved! Away with compromise! Away with further attempts to conciliate traitors! To arms!" Slavery might do all else, so little did most northerners yet feel its evil, but it could not rend the Union. Pulpit, platform, and press echoed with patriotic cries. Everywhere were Union meetings,

speeches, and parades. Union badges decked every one's clothing, and the Stars and Stripes were kept unfurled as only on national holidays before. In New York City, a mass-meeting, of two hundred thousand declared for war. The New York *Herald* changed its sneer to a war-blast. Party lines were thrown down. Democrats like Butler, Cass, and Dickinson were in the Union van. Senator Douglas, lately Lincoln's antagonist, and at first strongly opposed to coercion, went through the West arousing the people by his patriotic eloquence. "There can be no neutrals now," were his words, "only patriots and traitors."

April 15th, President Lincoln issued a call for seventy-five thousand volunteers, and each free State responded with twice its quota. Enlisting offices were opened in every town and hamlet, and the roll of the drum and the tramp of armed men with faces set southward were heard all over the North. First to march was the Sixth Massachusetts Regiment. Forming on Boston Common it took cars for Washington on April 17th, reaching Baltimore on the morning of the 19th.

Maryland was trembling in the balance between Union and disunion. A determined disunionist minority was working with might and main to drag the State into secession. Baltimore was white hot with southern zeal, determined that the Bay State troops should never reach Washington through that metropolis. Eight of the cars containing the soldiers were drawn safely across the city. The next was assailed by a hooting mob, and

the windows smashed in by bricks and paving stones. Some of the soldiers were wounded by pistol shots, and a scattering fire was returned. Sand, stones, anchors, and other obstructions were heaped upon the track. The remaining four companies therefore left the cars and started to march. They soon met the mob, flying a secession flag. A *mêlée* ensued. The troops moved double-quick toward the Washington depot, surrounded by a seething mass of infuriated secessionists filling the air with their brickbats and stones, while bullets whizzed from sidewalks and windows. The troops returned the fire, and several in the crowd fell. The chief of police with fifty officers appeared on the scene, who, by presenting cocked revolvers, held the rioters in check for a while, till the distressed troops could join their comrades. Baltimore was in the hands of this secessionist band for the rest of the day. The bridges north of that city were also burned, so that no more troops could reach Washington by this route.

Meanwhile the capital city was in great peril, devotees of the South being each moment expected to make an attack upon it. Only fifteen companies of local militia and six of regulars were present at inauguration time, stationed by General Scott at critical points in the city. Pickets were posted continually on roads and bridges outside. Four hundred Pennsylvania troops happily arrived on April 18th, and the next day came the Sixth Massachusetts. But the city was not yet secure. There were reports that large bodies of men were gathering in Maryland and Virginia for a descent

upon it. Washington was put in a state of siege, the public buildings barricaded and provided with sentinels. The Government seized the Potomac steamers and also all the flour within reach. Business ceased. Alarmed by rumors of a military impressment, hundreds of government clerks, besides officers in the army and navy, came out in their true colors and fled south. Enemies at Baltimore had cut off telegraphic communication between Washington and the North. Reports came that re-enforcements were on the way, but day followed day without witnessing their arrival. The President and all Unionists were in an agony of suspense.

On April 22d the Eighth Massachusetts, under General B. F. Butler, and the famous Seventh Regiment from New York City, met at Annapolis. Here they were delayed several days. Governor Hicks had warned them not to land on Maryland soil. The railroad to Washington had been torn up for many miles and the engines damaged. Among his troops Butler found the very machinists who had made the engines. Repairs were promptly effected, the track re-laid, and about noon of the 25th the gallant New Yorkers landed in Washington amid the joyful shouts of the loyal populace. Up Pennsylvania Avenue swept the solid ranks, bands playing and colors flying, to gladden the heart of the careworn President as he welcomed them at the White House. A sudden change came over the city. Secessionists slunk away, the faces of the loyal beamed with joy. The national capital was safe.

CHAPTER IV.

WAR BEGUN

It was now apparent to both North and South that war was inevitable. Yet neither side believed the other in full earnest or dreamed of a long struggle. Sanguine northerners looked to see the rebellion stamped out in thirty days. The more cautious allowed three months.

The President, however, soon saw that more troops, enlisted for a longer term, would be necessary. At the outset the South certainly possessed decided advantages: greater earnestness, more men of leisure aching for war and accustomed to saddle and firearms, a militia better organized, owing to fear of slave insurrections, and now for a long time in special training, and withal a certain soldierly fire and dash native to the people. The South also had superior arms. Enlistments there were prompt and abundant. The troops were ably commanded, two hundred and sixty-two of the nine hundred and fifty-one regular army officers whom secession found in service, including many very high in rank, joining their States in the new cause, besides a large number of West Point graduates from civil life.

Accordingly on May 3d Mr. Lincoln issued a

new call for troops, 42,000 volunteers to serve three years or during the war, 23,000 regulars, and 18,000 seamen. It was of first importance to secure Maryland for the Union. On the night of May 13th, under cover of a thunderstorm, General Butler suddenly entered rebellious Baltimore with less than one thousand men, and entrenched upon Federal Hill. Overawed by this bold move, the secessionists made no resistance. A political reaction soon set in throughout the State, which became firmly Unionist. Baltimore was once more open to the passage of troops, who kept steadily hurrying to the front.

Meanwhile the confederate forces were getting uncomfortably close to Washington. From the White House a secession flag could be seen flying at Alexandria, which was occupied by a small pro-secession garrison. There was fear lest that party would occupy Arlington Heights, across from Washington, and thence pour shot and shell into the city. At two o'clock on the morning of May 24th, eight regiments crossed the Potomac and took possession of these hills as far south as Alexandria, and fortified them. The latter place was entered by Colonel Ellsworth with his famous New York Zouaves. No resistance was made, as the confederates had retired, but Ellsworth was brutally assassinated while hauling down the secession flag.

Upon the secession of Virginia the confederate capital was removed to Richmond. The main armies of both sides were now encamped on Old Dominion soil, and at no great distance apart; but

the commanders were busy drilling their raw troops, so that for a time only trifling engagements occurred. General Butler, with a considerable body of men, was occupying Fortress Monroe, at the mouth of the James River. June 10th, an expedition sent by him against the confederates at Big Bethel, some twelve miles distant, was repulsed after a spirited attack, with a total loss of sixty-eight. A week later an Ohio regiment took the cars to make a reconnoissance toward Vienna, a village not far south of Washington. They were surprised by Confederates, who placed two guns on the track and fired on the train as it came around a curve. The Ohioans sprang to the ground, and after some fighting drove their opponents back.

All this time both North and South were struggling for possession of the neutral States. Governor Jackson, of Missouri, was straining every nerve to force his State into secession. Early in May two or three regiments of militia were got together and drilled in a camp near St. Louis. Cannon were sent by President Davis, boxed up and marked "marble." Captain Lyon, of the regular army, who held the St. Louis arsenal with a few companies, reconnoitred the secessionist camp in female dress. The next day, May 10th, assisted by local militia, he suddenly surrounded it and took twelve hundred prisoners. A month later he embarked some soldiers on three swift steamers, sailed up the Missouri to Jefferson City, the state capital, and raised the Union flag once more over the State House. Governor Jackson

fied. During the next month all the armed disunionists were driven into the southwestern part of the State.

The last of July a state convention organized a provisional government and declared for the Union. But the secessionists, under General Price, continued the struggle. The Union forces, after a brave fight against great odds at Wilson's Creek, August 10th, in which Lyon was killed, had to retreat north. General Fremont had shortly before been put at the head of the Western Department, which included Missouri, Kentucky, Illinois, and Kansas. His difficulties were great. He was unable to clear the State of secessionists, who besieged Lexington and took it on September 20th. Generals Hunter and Halleck, Fremont's successors, were equally unsuccessful, and the State was harassed by a petty warfare all the year.

In Kentucky, Governor Magoffin was inclined to secession. The Legislature leaned the other way, but preferred neutrality to active participation on either side. September 6th, Brigadier-General U. S. Grant occupied Paducah, an important strategical point at the junction of the Ohio and Tennessee rivers. Next day the confederate General Polk, advancing from below, took possession of Columbus on the Mississippi. With both hostile armies thus encamped on her soil, Kentucky could no longer be neutral. Her decision was quickly taken. The Legislature demanded of President Davis to withdraw Polk's forces, at the same time calling upon General Anderson, the hero of Sumter, who had been placed in charge

of the Department of the Cumberland, to take active measures for the defence of this his native State.

The mountain portion of Virginia belonged to the West rather than to the South. It contained only 18,000 slaves, against nearly 500,000 in Eastern Virginia. Union sentiment was therefore strong, and when the old State seceded from the Union, Western Virginia proceeded to secede from the State. General Lee sent troops to hold it for the Confederacy. Thereupon General McClellan, commanding the Department of the Ohio, threw several regiments across the river into Virginia, and defeated the foe in minor engagements at Philippi, Rich Mountain, and Carrick's Ford. By the middle of July he was able to report, "Secession is killed in this country." Later in the year the Confederates renewed their attempts, but were finally driven out. West Virginia organized a separate government, and was subsequently admitted to the Union as a State by itself.

While these struggles were going on in the border commonwealths, the Union soldiers lay inactive along the Potomac. Constant drill had changed the mob into some semblance of an organized army, but the careful Scott feared to risk a general engagement. The hostile forces stretched in three pairs of groups across Virginia from northwest to southeast. In the southeastern part of the State, at Fortress Monroe, Butler faced the confederate Magruder. At Manassas, opposite Washington, and about thirty miles southwest, lay a confederate army under General Beaure-

gard. General Patterson, a veteran of the war of 1812, commanded considerable forces in Southern Pennsylvania. About the middle of June he advanced against Harper's Ferry, which had been abandoned by the Unionists the latter part of April and was now occupied by General Joseph E. Johnston. Johnston evacuated the place upon Patterson's approach, and retreated up the Shenandoah Valley, in a southwesterly direction, to Winchester. Patterson followed part way, and the two armies now lay watching each other.

Anxious to see the rebellion put down by one blow, the North was becoming impatient. "On to Richmond!" was the ceaseless cry. Yielding to this, Scott ordered an advance. July 16th, General McDowell, leaving one division to protect Washington, led forth an army twenty-eight thousand strong to attack the enemy at Manassas. He advanced slowly and with great caution. The enemy were found posted in a line eight miles long upon the south bank of Bull Run, a small river three miles east of Manassas, running in a southeasterly direction. Several days were spent in reconnoitering. Meanwhile, Johnston, whom Patterson was expected to hold at Winchester, had stolen away to join Beauregard, their combined forces numbering about thirty thousand. McDowell was ignorant of Johnston's movement, supposing him still at Winchester.

On the morning of the 21st McDowell advanced to the attack. Beauregard held all the lower fords, besides a stone bridge on the Warrenton turnpike which crosses the river at right angles.

Two divisions, under Hunter and Heintzelman, were set in motion before sunrise to make a flanking detour and cross Bull Run at Sudley's Ford, some distance farther up. To distract attention from this movement, Tyler's division began an attack at the stone bridge. This was held by a regiment and a half, with four guns, under General Evans. He replied vigorously at first, but perceiving after a while that Tyler was only feigning, and learning of the flank movement above, he left four companies at the bridge and drew up the rest of his forces on a ridge north of Warrenton turnpike to await Hunter and Heintzelman's approach down the Sudley road.

The fight began about ten o'clock. Both sides were soon re-enforced. After two hours' stubborn fighting the Confederates were driven back across the pike, beyond Young's Branch of Bull Run, and took up a second position on a hill each side of the Henry House. The whole Union force had now crossed Bull Run. Griffin's and Ricketts' powerful batteries were posted in favorable positions, whence they poured a deadly fire upon the Confederates. The whole Union line advanced to the turnpike. About two o'clock the Confederates were forced to abandon their second position and fall back still farther.

Early in the morning Beauregard and Johnston had given orders for an attack upon the Union forces across the river, not knowing that McDowell had assumed the offensive. These orders were now countermanded, and all available troops hurried up the Sudley road toward the Warrenton

pike front. Till after noon the prospect for the Confederates looked gloomy. They had been steadily driven back. Some of their regiments had lost heavily, while all were more or less demoralized. Johnston and Beauregard gave their personal direction to re-forming the line upon a second ridge to the south of the Warrenton pike, under cover of a semicircular piece of woods. Twelve regiments, with twenty-two guns and two companies of cavalry, concentrated in this favorable position and awaited the Union advance.

McDowell had fourteen regiments available for the attack. He decided to hurl them against the confederate centre and left. About half-past two Griffin's and Ricketts' batteries took up an advanced position on Henry Hill. The confederate guns opened fire, and a short artillery duel took place. A confederate regiment now advances to capture the exposed batteries. They are mistaken for Union re-enforcements and allowed to come within close range. The muskets are levelled. A terrible volley is poured into the batteries. The gunners are stricken down. The frantic horses dash madly down the hill. After a little confusion the Union troops boldly advance and retake the batteries. The battle surges back and forth. The guns are three times captured and lost again. The fight becomes general along the confederate centre and left. The Union generals are getting alarmed. So far they have been confident of victory. Now regiment after regiment is going to pieces in this terrific *mêlée*, and still the "rebels" hold their ground. About half-past four

o'clock General Early arrives by rail with three thousand more of Johnston's army, and, assisted by a battery and five companies of cavalry, bursts upon the extreme right flank and rear of McDowell's line.

This manœuvre decided the day. The Union ranks waver, break, flee. The centre and left soon follow, though in better order. Union and confederate generals alike were astonished at the sudden change. McDowell found it impossible to stem the tide once set in, and gave orders to fall back across Bull Run to Centreville, where his reserves were stationed. As the retreat went on it turned to a downright rout. The Confederates made only a feeble pursuit, but fear of pursuit spread alarm through the flying ranks, demoralized by long marching and hard fighting. Baggage and ammunition-wagons, ambulances, private vehicles which had been standing in the rear, joined the sweeping tide, adding to the confusion and in some places causing temporary blockade. Frightened teamsters cut traces and galloped recklessly away. Panic and stampede resulted, soon reaching the soldiers. Flinging away muskets and knapsacks, they sought safety in flight. The army entered Centreville a disorganized mass. Fugitives could not be stayed even there, but streamed through and on toward Washington. McDowell gave the order to continue the retreat. The reserve brigades, with the one regiment of regulars, covered the rear in good order. All that night the crazy hustle to the rear was kept up, and on Monday the hungry and exhausted stragglers

poured into Washington under a drizzling rain, the people receiving them with heavy hearts but generous hands.

The Union loss was 481 killed, 1,011 wounded, 1,460 prisoners. Twenty-five guns were lost, thirteen of them on the retreat. The confederate loss was 387 killed, 1,580 wounded. The numbers actively engaged were about 18,000 on each side. General Sherman pronounced Bull Run "one of the best planned battles of the war, but one of the worst fought." The latter fact was but natural. The troops on both sides were poorly drilled and most of them had never been under fire before. Precision of movement, concert of action on any large scale, were impossible. Neither side needed to be ashamed of this initial trial.

The North was at first much cast down. The faint-hearted considered the Union hopelessly lost, but pluck and patriotism carried the day. On the morrow after the battle Congress voted that an army of 500,000 should be raised, and appropriated $500,000,000 to carry on the war. General McClellan, whose brilliant campaign in West Virginia had won him easy fame, was put in command of the Army of the Potomac. The young general was a West Point graduate and had served with distinction in the Mexican War. An accomplished military student, a skilful engineer, and a superb organizer, he threw himself with energy into the task of fortifying Washington and building up a splendid army. Many of the three-months volunteers re-enlisted. Thousands of new recruits came flocking to camp, and before long

companies, regiments, and brigades amounting to 150,000 men were drilling daily on the banks of the Potomac, while formidable works crowned the entire crest of Arlington Heights. In October the aged General Scott resigned, and McClellan, at the summit of his popularity with army and people, became commander-in-chief.

For several weeks after Bull Run it was feared that Beauregard and his men would descend upon Washington, then in a defenceless condition; but they were in no state to attack. They too felt the need of preparation for the coming struggle, whose magnitude both sides now began to realize.

A disheartening affair occurred in October. On the night of the 20th two Massachusetts regiments crossed the Potomac at Ball's Bluff, a few miles above Washington, to surprise a hostile camp which according to rumor had been established there. A large force concealed in the woods attacked and forced them to retreat. They were reenforced by 1,900 men under Colonel Baker. The enemy were also re-enforced. Baker was killed and the Union soldiers driven over the bluff into the river. The boats were totally inadequate in number, and the men had to make their way across as best they could, exposed to the confederate fire. The total Union loss was 1,000.

On the whole, then, the South had reason to be gratified with the aggregate result of the first year of war. Bull Run gave the Confederates a sense of invincibility, and the ready recognition by the foreign powers of their rights as belligerents, offered

hope that England would soon acknowledge their independence itself. And they thought that the North had been doing its best when it had only been getting ready.

THE
SOUTHERN CONFEDERACY.
SCALE OF MILES
0 50 100 200 300 400 500
BRITISH POSSESSIONS
OREGON TER.
WASHINGTON TER.
DAKOTA TER.
MINNESOTA TER.
WISCONSIN
MICHIGAN
NEBRASKA TER.
UTAH TER.
COLORADO TER.
KANSAS
IOWA
ILLINOIS
INDIANA
OHIO
PENNSYLVANIA
NEW YORK
MAINE
NEW MEXICO TER.
INDIAN TERRITORY
ARKANSAS
MISSOURI
KENTUCKY
TENNESSEE
NORTH CAROLINA
SOUTH CAROLINA
GEORGIA
ALABAMA
MISSISSIPPI
LOUISIANA
TEXAS
FLORIDA
CALIFORNIA
Lake Winnipeg
Lake of the Woods
Lake Superior
Lake Michigan
Lake Huron
Lake Erie
Lake Ontario
Gulf of California
Gulf of Mexico
Atlantic Ocean
Pacific Ocean
Bahama Islands
Longitude West 97 from Greenwich

CHAPTER V.

THE STRUGGLE FOR THE MISSISSIPPI VALLEY

THE North conducted the war upon three great lines of campaign: 1. The Western campaigns, to clear the Mississippi River and thus divide the Confederacy. 2. The campaigns in the centre, to reach the sea at Mobile, Savannah, or Charleston, cutting the Confederacy a second time. 3. The Eastern campaigns, to take Richmond, and capture or destroy the main confederate army, ending the Confederacy. This chapter deals with the Western campaigns alone.

The opening of 1862 found the Confederates in possession of a strong line across the southern portion of Western Kentucky, stretching from Bowling Green, near the centre of the State, to Columbus on the Mississippi. The two gates of this line were Forts Henry and Donelson, on the Tennessee and Cumberland Rivers, respectively, just over the Tennessee border. If these forts could be taken the Confederates must give up Kentucky.

On February 6th, after a two hours' bombardment, Fort Henry surrendered to General Grant, who had come up the river from Cairo with seventeen thousand troops, and with seven gunboats commanded by Commodore Foote. Most of the

garrison, about three thousand, had been sent off before the fleet opened fire, General Tilghman foreseeing that he could not hold the fort. The land forces arrived too late to cut off their retreat, and they escaped safely to Fort Donelson, some dozen miles to the east.

Grant marched at once to invest Donelson, and sat down before it on the 12th with fifteen thousand men. The stronghold stood upon a bluff one hundred feet high. On the east it was protected by the Cumberland River; on the north and south by two flooded creeks. Along a crest back of the fort a mile or two ran a semicircular line of rifle-pits, with abatis in front. Nine batteries were posted at various points along the line. Donelson was garrisoned by twenty thousand men under Generals Floyd, Pillow, and Buckner, who quietly looked on while Grant's smaller army hemmed them in. On the 14th the gunboats opened fire upon the water batteries between fort and river. Commodore Foote steamed up boldly within four hundred yards and pounded the opposing works with his heavy guns. He did little damage, however, while the confederate fire proved very effective against him. His flag-ship, the Hartford, was struck fifty-nine times. A shot crashed into the pilot-house, destroying the wheel and wounding Foote himself. The boat became unmanageable and drifted down-stream. A shot cut the tiller-ropes of the Louisville. The other boats were also considerably damaged, and after an action of an hour and a half, the entire fleet withdrew.

But Grant's army had been re-enforced to twenty-seven thousand. Three divisions, under Smith, Wallace, and McClernand, stretched in a semicircle about Donelson from north to south. On the night of the 14th the confederate generals held a consultation, and decided to try cutting their way out. Most of the troops were withdrawn from the rifle-pits during the night, and massed on the Union right. The weather had suddenly turned frosty, and the Union men, without tents or camp-fires, many even without blankets, shivered all night in the intense cold. Before dawn the attacking column from inside, ten thousand strong, rushed through the woods and fell upon McClernand's division, which formed the Union right. For hours the woods rang with musketry and the southern yell. Slowly the Confederates drove the Unionists before them and gained the road running south to Charlotte, opening to themselves the way of escape.

This, however, they had not yet utilized, when, about one o'clock General Grant, who had been aboard the fleet consulting with Commodore Foote, came upon the field. Learning that the foe had begun to fight with full haversacks, he instantly divined that they were trying to make their escape, and inferred that their forces had been mostly withdrawn from opposite the Union left to make this attack against the right. General Smith was therefore instantly ordered to fall upon the confederate right. As Grant had surmised, the intrenchments there were easily carried. Meanwhile the demoralized soldiers of the

Union right and centre rallied, and drove the Confederates back to their intrenchments. At daybreak Buckner sent to Grant for terms of capitulation. "No terms except unconditional and immediate surrender can be accepted: I propose to move immediately upon your works," was the answer. The resolute words rang through the North, carrying big hope in their remotest echo. Donelson surrendered. Floyd and Pillow had sneaked away during the night, the former monopolizing the few boats to transport his own brigade. Fifteen thousand troops remained and were taken prisoners.

The capture of Henry and Donelson necessitated the evacuation of Bowling Green and Columbus. Kentucky was now clear of Confederates, and the Mississippi open down to Island Number Ten. This island lay in a bend of the river at the extreme northwestern corner of Tennessee. The great stream here runs northwest for a dozen miles, then sharply turns to the south again. New Madrid stands at this northern bend. It was protected by confederate fortifications and gunboats. Early in March, General Halleck, now at the head of the Western Department, sent General Pope against New Madrid with twenty thousand men. The enemy fled to Island Number Ten, leaving thirty-three guns, besides ammunition and many tents.

Island Number Ten was strongly fortified. Commodore Foote came down the river with seventeen gun-boats, and on March 16th began a bombardment which was kept up for three weeks

with little effect; but early in April Pope got upon the Tennessee shore, in the undefended rear of the island, and by intercepting its communication to the south, forced it to surrender, April 8th. Seven thousand prisoners, one hundred heavy siege guns, several thousand small arms, besides large stores of ammunition and supplies, were thus secured, without the loss of a single Union soldier. This exploit brought to Pope great fame.

Pope now descended the river to Fort Pillow, one hundred miles below, which he prepared to take. He was just then transferred by Halleck to another field, and the reduction of Pillow left to the gun-boats. Pillow was abandoned June 4th. The Union flotilla, increased by four rams, now ran down the river to Memphis, where, on June 6th, in the presence of thousands of spectators upon the bluffs, it fought a battle with a southern fleet. Seven of the confederate boats were destroyed, and the next day Memphis surrendered.

After the fall of Donelson the Confederates began concentrating their forces at Corinth, in the northeast corner of Mississippi. Meanwhile the Army of the Tennessee, under orders from Halleck, had moved up the Tennessee River, and encamped, some forty thousand strong, at Pittsburg Landing on the Tennessee River, twenty-five miles north of Corinth. Here Grant, who had been temporarily removed, took command again on March 17th. Buell, with forty thousand men, was on the march thither from Central Tennessee. The confederate generals at Corinth, Albert Sidney Johnston and Beauregard, wisely determined to strike Grant be-

fore Buell arrived. There ensued the greatest battle * which had up to that time shaken the solid ground of this continent.

About six o'clock on the morning of April 6th the Confederates burst through the thick woods upon the Union pickets and drove them in. It was at least partially a surprise. Grant in person was nine miles down the river. The Union officers hastily got their men into line, as the attacking columns came sweeping in after the pickets. Three of the five Union divisions were raw recruits, many of whom fled at the first fire. Some colonels led their entire regiments off the field. Later in the day Grant saw four or five thousand of these runaways cowering under the shelter of the bluffs.

But the bulk of the army made a stubborn resistance. General W. T. Sherman, then comparatively unknown, inspired his division of raw troops with his own intelligent courage. Their gallant and protracted fight around the Shiloh log church made them the heroes of the day. But the Confederates' onset was impetuous. Step by step they forced their opponents back through the heavy woods, and by noon stood in possession of the Union camps; Grant's army, badly shattered, being cooped up in a narrow space along the edge of the river.

The tide now turned. About two o'clock, General Johnston was killed, and the confederate advance flagged. Between the two armies lay a deep ravine. Grant planted some fifty guns upon

* Indifferently called the Battle of Shiloh or the Battle of Pittsburg Landing.

the edge, and two of the gun-boats took positions where they could rake the ravine. By these dispositions Beauregard's advance was stayed. Night fell, and hostilities ceased.

Fortunately, 22,000 of Buell's men arrived during the night, and next morning Grant ordered an advance. Beauregard made as desperate a resistance as he could, seeing that his heavy losses the day before had left him but 30,000 troops fit for duty. Buell's men showed the effects of long training under that matchless disciplinarian, and fought splendidly. The enemy were steadily pushed back, until more than all the ground lost on the preceding day had been triumphantly regained, and the Battle of Pittsburg Landing, from being for the Union side a defeat accomplished and a surrender threatened, was turned into a bright and inspiring victory. Beauregard ordered a retreat, and, not being pursued, regained his old position at Corinth. He had lost about 10,000 men. Our loss was 12,000, including four regiments taken prisoners. The battle was a severe check to both sides.

On February 2d the largest fleet that had ever sailed under the American flag left Fortress Monroe for the mouth of the Mississippi, commanded by Commodore Farragut. It consisted of sixteen gun-boats, twenty-one mortar-schooners, six sloops of war, and five other vessels. Fifteen thousand land troops, under General Butler, soon followed. Thirty miles below New Orleans Forts Jackson and St. Philip, mounting 100 guns, frowned at each other across the Mississippi. Farragut's fleet

sailed up the river and the mortar-schooners were moored to the banks within range of the forts. Boughs were tied to the top-masts so that the enemy could not distinguish them from the trees along the shore. April 18th the mortars began shelling the forts. An incessant fire was kept up night and day for six days, till nearly six thousand shells had been thrown.

As the forts sustained little damage, Farragut decided to run the batteries. A gun-boat stole up by night and cut the boom of hulks chained together, which crossed the river just below the forts. Some of the boats were rubbed over with mud to make them invisible, and chain cables hung over the sides to protect the engines. About half past two in the night of April 23d the fleet moved up the river through the gap in the boom. The enemy, on the alert, launched fire-rafts and lit bonfires to lift the cover of night. Old Jackson and St. Philip poured a hot fire into the fleet as vessel after vessel slowly steamed past, answering with its most spiteful broadsides.

But the Union craft had more than the forts against them. Once past the boom they were in the midst of a hostile fleet of fifteen vessels, including a dangerous iron-clad ram. A fierce water-fight followed. The Union Varuna was sunk; the flag-ship Hartford set on fire by one of the fire-rafts. The flames, however, were soon put out. Other vessels were disabled. But every one of the confederate ships was captured or destroyed, and Jackson and St. Philip had to surrender. Farragut then sailed up the river and

took possession of New Orleans without resistance. Butler at once occupied the city with his troops, and the Stars and Stripes again waved over the Crescent City. Since that eventful day New Orleans has never been in disunionist hands.

After the battle of Pittsburg Landing, Halleck himself came down from St. Louis, and took the reins. Grant was nominally in command under him, but had next to nothing to do. Re-enforced by 25,000 men under Pope, Halleck slowly advanced toward Corinth, entering the place May 30th, Beauregard having evacuated it May 29th. A few Quaker guns — logs mounted on wagon-wheels — were the only trophies. Halleck now had 110,000 effectives, Beauregard less than 60,000. Halleck lay inactive at Corinth for six weeks, when he was summoned to Washington as General-in-Chief.

Grant once more took command of the forces about Corinth, which re-enforcements to Eastern Tennessee soon reduced to 42,000. With these he was expected to guard two hundred miles of railroad, from Memphis to Decatur in Northern Alabama. The Confederates under Van Dorn and Price attempted to regain Corinth, but in the battles of Iuka, September 19th, and Corinth, October 3d and 4th, were repulsed with heavy losses. Grant then took the offensive. Vicksburg, about half-way from north to south on Mississippi's western boundary, was the only stronghold left to the Confederates on the great river. Its capture would ideally complete the western campaign. Grant's plan was for Sherman to descend the riv-

er from Memphis, while he himself simultaneously attacked Vicksburg by land.

So long as the stout-hearted general continued his march south all his supplies had to be brought over the Mississippi Central Railroad from Holly Springs, near the Tennessee border. A troop of 3,500 confederate cavalry, making a long detour around his army, swooped down upon Holly Springs, December 20th, captured the garrison of 1,300 men, and destroyed all the stores, valued at $2,000,000. For two weeks the Union army had to live from the enemy's country, and then after all to fall back to Holly Springs. Meanwhile Sherman, ignorant of his superior's ill fortune, descended the Mississippi, and with a force of 30,000 made during the last days of the year an unsuccessful attack upon Vicksburg.

Very early in January, 1863, McClernand arrived near Vicksburg with re-enforcements. The last of the month, Grant, who had given up the land expedition, took command in person. Sherman's repulse had shown that Vicksburg could not be taken from the water side. A position must be gained in the rear. This seemed, and indeed proved, an almost impossible task. The Mississippi was unusually high, and the surrounding country a vast network of bayous and swamps. The winter passed away in fruitless labors to make some sort of a water passage to the rear of Vicksburg, either above, via the Yazoo, or around through Louisiana to some point below the city, whence the army could cross again to the Vicksburg side of the Mississippi and strike

Pemberton's stronghold from the southeast. In most of these attempts Grant himself had little faith, but the army was better at work than idle. At last he resolved, without attempting a regular canal, partly by land but utilizing bayous and creeks as he could, to swing his army across west of the river to New Carthage, south of Vicksburg, run the Vicksburg batteries with the fleet, and, uniting his land and water forces in the capture of Grand Gulf, to gain the rear of Vicksburg by way of the Big Black River. It was a bold plan but it succeeded.

In April, by building corduroy roads through miles of swamp and bridging numberless bayous, the general succeeded in reaching New Carthage, some twenty miles south of Vicksburg, with a good part of his land forces. On the night of April 16th, the gun-boats and provision transports ran the gauntlet of Vicksburg's guns with little damage. The last of the month a landing was effected just below Grand Gulf, on the east bank, fifteen or twenty miles still farther south of Vicksburg. The enemy made some resistance, but were driven back.

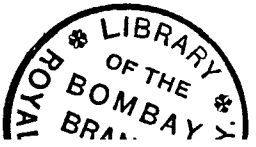
Grant's position was now full of peril. He was in the heart of the enemy's country. Pemberton was occupying Jackson and Vicksburg with fifty thousand men. General Joseph E. Johnston was hurrying to his aid with re-enforcements. Grant's forces available for an advance about equalled Pemberton's. A bold policy was the only safe one. Taking five days' rations, he cut loose from his base at Grand Gulf and marched north to at-

tack Pemberton before Johnston could join him. Jackson, forty-four miles to the east of Vicksburg, was easily captured, May 14th. Grant had thus thrust himself in between Johnston and Pemberton. Turning to the left he smote Pemberton a heavy blow at Champion's Hill on the 16th, and drove him into Vicksburg. Johnston fell back baffled. In eighteen days Grant had marched 200 miles, defeated the enemy in four engagements, inflicting a loss of 8,000 and taking eighty-eight guns, and shut up a large army in Vicksburg—all this upon five days' rations. It is a brilliant record, equalled, if at all, only by some of Napoleon's campaigns.

The bold commander now transferred his base of supplies to the Yazoo River, which runs into the Mississippi a few miles above Vicksburg. After an unsuccessful assault upon the city's strong intrenchments, he sat down to a deliberate siege. Twelve miles of trenches were constructed. Eighty-nine batteries, with more than two hundred guns, day after day rained shot and shell against the Vicksburg fortifications. The lines of investment crept nearer and nearer the fated city. The pickets chaffed with each other, and exchanged tobacco and newspapers. June 25th, a mine was exploded under one of the Vicksburg parapets, but it made no effectual breach. A second explosion, July 1st, was equally unavailing. Johnston kept menacing the rear, but feared to attack, as Grant had been re-enforced to 60,000.

Famine began to threaten the city, Porter's fleet blockading the water front. Flour sold for $1,000

a barrel in confederate money. Mule flesh became the chief meat. Rats were hung up for sale in the market. The inhabitants sought protection from the shells in cellars and caves. Cave-digging became a regular business. The Vicksburg daily news sheet was now printed on wall paper. July 3d, white flags appeared upon the city's works. An armistice followed, and the next day Pemberton surrendered. The prisoners, some thirty thousand in number, were mostly released on parole. With the fall of Vicksburg the western campaigns virtually closed. The capture of Port Hudson, below, was assured from that moment, and followed on July 8th. The "Father of Waters" once more rolled "unvexed to the sea," and the Confederacy was cut in twain.



CHAPTER VI.

THE WAR IN THE CENTRE

We have seen that the fall of Donelson had driven the Confederates out of Kentucky. In the following September, 1862, Bragg invaded the State from Tennessee with forty thousand men. Buell hurried north from Nashville, and after an exciting race headed him off from Louisville. Bragg slowly fell back, first east, then south. Kentucky was rich in food and clothing, and his army plundered freely, coming out, it was boasted, with a wagon-train forty miles long. At Perryville Bragg turned upon Buell fiercely. An indecisive battle was fought, October 8, 1862, which gave the richly loaded wagon-train time to escape into Tennessee, whither Bragg followed.

The Christmas holidays of 1862 found the confederate host at Murfreesboro, Tenn., thirty miles southeast of Nashville, where the Union army lay. Rosecrans, who had succeeded Buell, moved suddenly to the banks of Stone River, within four miles of the gay town, and prepared to attack. Bragg, like Wellington from Brussels on the morning of Waterloo, hurried forth to meet him. At dawn, December 31st, the gray-colored columns emerged from the fog that overhung the river, and

spiritedly beat up the Union right. Two divisions were swept back. Sheridan's men, inspired by their dashing leader, held their ground for awhile, but fell rearward at last, and, forming a new line, stood at bay with fixed bayonets. Rosecrans recalled the troops who had crossed the river to make a similar attack upon the confederate right, and massed all his forces at the point of assault. Six times the southrons charged, six times they were tumbled back by the Union batteries double-shotted with canister. Night fell on a drawn battle.

The next day, January 1, 1863, was peaceful save for cavalry skirmishing. January 2d the awful combat was renewed. Rosecrans having planted artillery upon commanding ground, Bragg must either carry this or fall back. He attempted the first alternative, and was repulsed with terrible slaughter, losing two thousand men in forty minutes. He escaped south under cover of a storm. In proportion to the numbers engaged, the battle of Stone River was one of the bloodiest in the war. About 45,000 fought on each side. The Union loss was 12,000, the confederate nearly 15,000.

Rosecrans did not advance again till June, although Bragg lay quite near. The latter fell back as the Unionists approached, first into Chattanooga and then over the Georgia line. Rosecrans followed. Bragg was now re-enforced, and determined to retake Chattanooga, which lay on the Tennessee River and was an important strategical point. The two armies met on Chickamauga

Creek, twelve miles south of Chattanooga. All through the first day's battle, September 19th, there was hot fighting — charges and counter-charges—but no decisive advantage fell to either side. During the night Bragg was re-enforced by Longstreet's corps from Virginia, and he opened the next day's fight with an assault upon the Union left. Brigades were moved from the centre to support the left. Through the gap thus made Longstreet poured his men in heavy columns, cutting the Union army in two. Its right wing became demoralized, and fled toward Chattanooga in wild confusion, Rosecrans after it at a gallop, believing that all was lost.

But all was not lost. General Thomas commanded the Union left. Like a flinty rock he stood while Polk's and Longstreet's troops surged in heavy masses against his front and flank. About three o'clock heavy columns were seen pouring through a gorge almost in Thomas's rear. They were Longstreet's men. It was a critical moment. Granger's reserves came rushing upon the field. Raw recruits though they were, they dashed against Longstreet like veterans. In twenty minutes, at cost of frightful slaughter, the gorge and ridge were theirs. Longstreet made another assault, but was again repulsed. At nightfall Thomas fell back to Chattanooga, henceforth named, and justly, the "Rock of Chickamauga." For six hours he had held his own with 25,000 braves against twice that number. Out of 70,000 troops Bragg lost probably 20,000. Rosecrans's force was about 55,000, his loss 16,000.

Bragg proceeded to shut up the Union army in Chattanooga. Grant, now commanding the Department of the Mississippi, was ordered to recover Chattanooga, and his deeds along this front, though less often mentioned, will glitter upon the page of history with little if any less lustre than those about Vicksburg. Upon his arrival, late in October, he found the city practically in a state of siege. Its railroad communication with Nashville was cut off, and supplies had to be hauled in wagons sixty miles over a rough mountain road. The men had been for some time on half rations. Thousands of horses and mules had starved, and the artillery could not be moved for lack of teams. There was not ammunition enough for one day's fighting. In five days Grant wrested the railroad from Bragg's men and bridged the Tennessee, so that an abundant supply of food and ammunition came pouring in.

Elated at his Chickamauga triumph, and unaware that he now had a greater than Rosecrans in his front, Bragg deemed it a safe and promising strategem to dispatch Longstreet's corps to Knoxville to capture Burnside. It was a fatal step, and Grant was not slow to take advantage of it. He telegraphed Sherman to put his entire force instantly *en route* from Vicksburg to Chattanooga.

Chattanooga lies on the south side of the Tennessee River, at the northern end of a valley running north and south. Along the eastern edge of the valley rises Missionary Ridge. On the western side and farther south, stands Lookout Moun-

tain. After passing Chattanooga, the river turns and runs south till it laves the base of Lookout Mountain. The confederate fortifications, twelve miles in length, ran along Missionary Ridge, across the southern end of the valley, and up over Lookout Mountain.

On November 23d, Thomas, who had succeeded Rosecrans, stormed the breastworks half a mile from the base of Missionary Ridge. The next day Grant sent "Fighting Joe Hooker" to sweep Bragg's detachment from Lookout Mountain. Mist lay along the lofty slopes as the gallant Hooker and his men moved up them, soon veiling the entire column from sight; and it was only by the rattle of the musketry that Grant knew how the fight progressed. This was the famous "Battle Above the Clouds." Hooker pounded the enemy so lustily that they were glad to evacuate the mountain in the night, and the next morning the Stars and Stripes saluted the breezes of its topmost peak.

While Hooker had been thus engaged, and for some days before, Sherman had been at a movement that was even more momentous. He had slyly thrust his army up the Tennessee River above the city, placing it between the river and Missionary Ridge, and had worked its flank to the left as far as the mouth of Chickamauga Creek. He had thus gotten possession of the entire northeastern spur of that ridge with hardly the loss of a corporal's guard.

The morrow after this was accomplished, November 25, 1863, was a day of blood. Bragg's

forces were now massed on Missionary Ridge, mainly in front of Thomas and Sherman. Hooker had come down into the valley and was to turn the enemy's left. If Bragg massed troops on either of the two wings, Thomas's braves were to be let slip against the weakened centre. Sherman got into action early in the morning, and fought his painfully difficult way slowly up the rugged declivities in his front. Hooker had to bridge Chattanooga Creek, and did not attack till afternoon. By three o'clock Sherman was so hard pressed that Grant found it necessary to relieve him by sending Thomas forward at the centre.

The signal guns boom—one, two, three, four, five, six. Up spring Thomas's heroes from their breastworks, and rush like a whirlwind for the first line of confederate rifle-pits. Bragg sees the advance and hurries help to oppose. His batteries open with shot and shell, then with canister. The infantry rake Thomas with a withering fire. Yet on, double quick, dash the lines of blue over the open plain, over rocks, stumps, and breastworks, bayonetting back or capturing their antagonists, till the first line of rifle-pits is theirs.

The orders had been to halt at this point and reform. But here, with Bragg's artillery raining a veritable hell-fire upon them—here is no place of resting, and as the men's blood is up, they sweep forward unbidden, with a cheer. It is five hundred yards to the top — a steep ascent, covered with bowlders and fallen timber. Over the rocks, under and through the timber, each one scrambles on as he can. Half-way up is a line of small

works. It is carried with a rush, and on the men go, right up to the crest of the ridge. Now they confront the heaviest breastworks. The air is thick with whizzing musket-balls, and fifty cannon belch flame and death. But nothing can stop that furious charge. Sheridan's men reach the top first, the rest of the line close behind. The "Johnnies" are routed after a short fight, and the guns turned against them as they fly. By night Bragg's army is in full retreat, Chattanooga is safe and free, Grant's lines of communication are assured, and the keys of the State of Georgia in his hands.

The Union forces in this battle numbered about 60,000, the confederate half as many; but the latter fought with all the advantage which the mountain and breastworks could give them. They lost nearly 10,000, including 6,500 prisoners. The Union loss was between 5,000 and 6,000—2,200 in the one hour's charge against the centre.

There was no halting, no resting. Scarcely had the sounds of yesterday's cannonade died away, when Sherman's already jaded forces were put in motion to the north, to make sure that Burnside was set free at Knoxville; but Longstreet had already raised the siege and started east. By December 6th, Bragg's redoubtable army, which, so recently as September, swore to reconquer Tennessee and to invade Kentucky, was rent in twain, one part of it fleeing to Virginia, the other to the heart of Georgia.

No important military movement occurred in the Centre during this winter of 1863–64. In March Grant was made Lieutenant-General, with

command of all the Union armies, Sherman succeeding to the headship of the Mississippi Department. The latter accompanied his superior toward Washington as far as Cincinnati, and there, in a parlor of the Burnet House, the two victorious generals, bending over their maps together, planned in outline that gigantic campaign of 1864–65, which was to end the war; then, grasping one another warmly by the hand, they parted, one starting east, the other south, each to strike at the appointed time his half of the ponderous death-blow.

Sherman pushed out from Chattanooga May 6, 1864, with 100,000 men and 254 cannon. His force comprised the Army of the Cumberland, 60,000, under Thomas; the Army of the Tennessee, 25,000, under Schofield; and the Army of the Ohio, 15,000, under McPherson. Johnston, who had superseded Bragg, lay behind strong works at Dalton, a few miles southeast, with 64,000 men, his base being Atlanta, eighty miles away. Sherman's supplies all came over a single line of railroad from Nashville, nearly 150 miles from Chattanooga as the road ran. Every advantage but numbers was on Johnston's side.

Sherman calculated that the Army of the Cumberland could hold his opponent at bay, while the two smaller armies crept around his flanks. This plan was adhered to throughout, and with wonderful success. All through May and the first of June a series of skilful flanking movements compelled Johnston to fall back from one position to another, each commander, like a tried boxer, constantly on the watch to catch his opponent off

guard. Heavy skirmishing day after day made the march practically one long battle.

June 10th Johnston planted his army upon three elevations—Kenesaw, Pine, and Lost Mountains—and stubbornly stood at bay. A pouring rain, which turned the whole country into a quagmire and the streams into formidable rivers, made the usual flank manœuvre impracticable. Sherman resolved to assault in front. June 27th a determined onset was made along the whole line for two hours, but failed, though the troops gained positions close to the hostile works and entrenched. They lost two thousand five hundred; the Confederates not more than a third of this number. The roads having now improved, Sherman resorted to his old tactics, the Confederates having to fall back across the Chattahoochee, and come to bay under the very guns of Atlanta.

Just at the critical moment, when Sherman's army was slowly closing in around Atlanta, General Johnston, so wary and cool, was superseded by the young and fiery Hood, pledged to assume the offensive. On the 20th Hood made a furious attack on Hooker's front, but was repulsed with heavy losses. On the 22d he struck again, and harder. By a night march, Hardee's corps at dawn fell upon the Union left flank and rear like a thunderbolt out of a clear sky, rolling up the Army of the Tennessee in great confusion. The brave and talented McPherson was killed early in the action, Logan succeeding. "McPherson and revenge," he cried, as upon his coal-black steed he careered from post to post of danger, inspiring his

men and restoring order. The veterans soon recovered from their surprise. The Union lines were completely re-established, and by night Hood's army was driven back into the city, having sacrificed probably 10,000 much-needed men, 2,500 of them killed.

Sherman now began to swing round to the south and southeast of Atlanta, till at last he cut its communications with the Confederacy. Hood evacuated the city and his opponent entered it, September 5th. The northern troops, after their four months' incessant marching and fighting, now got a little well-earned rest. Their total losses from Chattanooga were 32,000. The Confederates had sacrificed about 35,000—the larger part under Hood.

The last of September Hood struck out boldly for Tennessee, menacing, and, in fact, temporarily rupturing Sherman's long supply-line from Nashville. Leaving one corps to hold Atlanta, Sherman raced back for a hundred miles in pursuit. The railroad being well guarded, Hood could do no serious damage, and finally turned west into Alabama. Sherman now resolved on a march to the sea. Thomas, with three corps, was sent to Tennessee to look out for Hood. The sixty-two thousand troops remaining at Atlanta were put into light marching trim, and the wagons filled with twenty days' rations and two hundred rounds of ammunition per man. All storehouses and other property useful to the enemy were then destroyed, communications with the North cut, and November 15th a splendid army of hardy veterans

swung off for the Atlantic or the Gulf, over two hundred miles away. Their orders were to live on the country, the rations being kept for emergencies; but no dwellings were to be entered, and no houses or mills destroyed if the army was unmolested. The dwelling-house prescription was, alas, too often broken over. There was little resistance, Georgia having been drained of its able-bodied whites. Negroes flocked, singly and by families, to join "Massa Linkum's boys." The railroads were destroyed, and the Carolinas thus cut off from the Gulf States.

Each regiment detailed a certain number of foragers. These, starting off in the morning empty-handed and on foot, would return at night riding or driving beasts laden with spoils. "Here would be a silver-mounted family carriage drawn by a jackass and a cow, loaded inside and out with everything the country produced, vegetable and animal, dead and alive. There would be an ox-cart, similarly loaded, and drawn by a nondescript tandem team equally incongruous. Perched upon the top would be a ragged forager, rigged out in a fur hat of a fashion worn by dandies of a century ago, or a dress-coat which had done service at stylish balls of a former generation. The jibes and jeers, the fun and the practical jokes, ran down the whole line as the *cortége* came in, and no masquerade in carnival could compare with it for original humor and rollicking enjoyment. . . . The camps in the open pine-woods, the bonfires along the railways, the occasional sham battles at night with blazing pine-knots for weapons whirl-

ing in the darkness, all combined to leave upon the minds of officers and men the impression of a vast holiday frolic." *

At the start Sherman was uncertain just where he should strike the coast. The blockade vessels were asked to be on the lookout for him from Mobile to Charleston. By the middle of December the army lay before Savannah. Hardee held the city with sixteen thousand men, but evacuated it December 20, 1864, Sherman entering next day. He wrote to Lincoln, "I beg to present you as a Christmas gift the city of Savannah." The capture of Fort McAllister a week before had opened the Ogeechee River, and Sherman now established a new base of supplies on the sea-coast.

The North rang with praises of the Great March, which had pierced like a knife the vitals of the Confederacy. Georgia, with her arsenals and factories, had been the Confederacy's workshop. Twenty thousand bales of cotton had been burned upon the march, besides a great amount of military stores. The three hundred and twenty miles of railroad destroyed had practically isolated Virginia from the South and the West. And all this had been done with the loss of less than a thousand men.

Meanwhile Thomas had dealt the Confederacy another staggering blow. The adventurous Hood had advanced with his army of forty-four thousand to the very gates of Nashville. The deliberate Thomas, spite of prickings from Grant, waited till

* *The March to the Sea*, by Major-General J. D. Cox. Campaigns of the Civil War. Scribners.

he felt prepared. Then he struck with a Titan's hand. The first day's fight, December 15th, drove the confederate line back two miles. Hood formed again on hills running east and west, and hastily fortified. All next day the battle raged. Late in the afternoon the works on the confederate left were carried by a gallant charge. Total rout of Hood's brave army followed. It fled south, demoralized and scattered, never to appear again as an organized force. In the two days' battle, 4,500 prisoners and fifty-three guns were taken.

February 1, 1865, his troops all rested and equipped afresh, Sherman set his face to the north. The days of frolic were over. Continuous rains had made the Carolinas almost impassable. The march now begun was an incessant struggle with mud, swamps, and swollen rivers. A pontoon and trestle bridge three miles long was thrown across the Savannah, and miles of corduroy road were built through continuous swamps. Charleston, incessantly besieged since the war opened, where the United States had wasted more powder and iron than at all other points together, fell without a blow. Columbia was reached the middle of the month. It caught fire—just how has never been settled—and the greater part of the city was destroyed. Sherman's men helped to put out the flames, and left behind provisions and a herd of five hundred cattle for the suffering inhabitants.

The army pushed on toward North Carolina, destroying railroads as it went. Johnston was athwart their path with thirty thousand men. March 16th he struck Sherman's army at Averys-

boro', N. C., and three days later at Bentonville. In the latter battle he was completely routed, and retreated during the night. Sherman swept on to Goldsboro', where re-enforcements from the coast, under Schofield, increased his army to ninety thousand. He was undisputed master of the Carolinas. By this time the Confederacy was hastening to its fall. April 11th the news of Lee's surrender was hailed in Sherman's army with shouts of joy. A few days later Johnston surrendered to the hero of Atlanta and of the March to the Sea.

CHAPTER VII.

THE VIRGINIA CAMPAIGNS OF 1862–63

THE Army of the Potomac lay inactive all through the winter of 1861–62. The country cried "Forward," but it was March before McClellan was ready to stir. Then he sailed down Chesapeake Bay to attack Richmond from the south, with Fortress Monroe as base. The splendidly disciplined and equipped army, one hundred and twenty thousand strong, began embarking March 17th.

Fortress Monroe lies at the apex of a wedge-shaped peninsula formed by the York and James Rivers, which converge as they flow toward the coast. April 4th, McClellan started on his march up this peninsula. A line of confederate fortifications, twelve miles long, stretched across it, from Yorktown to the James, defended by ten thousand men. Yorktown must be taken to turn this line. A month was wasted in laborious siege preparations, for early in May, just before an overwhelming cannonade was to begin, the southern army evacuated the place and retreated toward Richmond.

McClellan hurried after it. A desultory battle was fought all day on the 5th, near Williamsburg,

the enemy withdrawing at night. McClellan now moved slowly up the peninsula, the last of May finding his army within ten miles of Richmond, encamped on both sides of the Chickahominy. By this time nearly seventy thousand troops had gathered for the defence of the confederate capital.

May 31st, the confederate General Joseph E. Johnston fell upon the part of McClellan's army south of the river, at Fair Oaks, and in a bloody battle drove it back a mile. McClellan sent reenforcements across the river, and the retreat was stayed. The lost ground was regained next day, and the enemy driven into Richmond. Johnston having been wounded, General Robert E. Lee was now placed in command of the Army of Virginia, destined to lay it down only at the collapse of the confederate government.

McClellan waited three weeks for better weather. He also expected McDowell's corps of 45,000, which had been kept near Fredericksburg to defend Washington, but was under orders at the proper time to co-operate with McClellan by moving against Richmond from the north. But Stonewall Jackson came raiding down the Shenandoah Valley, hustling General Banks before him. Washington was alarmed, and McDowell had to be retained.

Lee boldly took the offensive, and the "Seven Days' Fight" began. June 26th he attacked McClellan's extreme right under Porter, on the north side of the Chickahominy. He was repulsed, but Porter fell back farther down the river to Gaines's

Mill, there fought all the next day against great odds, and was saved from total rout toward night only by the arrival of re-enforcements.

Jackson's army from the north had joined Lee's left, and McClellan's communication with York River was in danger. He decided to change his base to the James, where he would have placed it at first but for his expectation of McDowell and his desire to connect with him. Everything not transportable, including millions of rations and hundreds of tons of ammunition, had to be destroyed. Five thousand loaded wagons, twenty-five hundred head of cattle, and the reserve artillery were then set in motion toward the James, protected by the army in flank and rear.

On discovering this movement Lee hastened to strike. A force was sent to assail the retreating column in the rear; but the bridgeless Chickahominy, guarded by artillery, held the pursuers at bay. Lee threw other portions of his army against McClellan's right, at Savage's Station on the 29th, at Frazier's Farm on the day following; but the Union troops each time stood their ground till ready and then continued their march.

July 1st found the retreating host concentrated on Malvern Hill, a plateau a mile and a half long and half as broad, with ravines toward the advancing enemy. Here McClellan planted seventy cannon, rising tier upon tier up the slope, seven heavy siege guns crowning the crest. The position was impregnable, but Lee determined to attack. Shortly before sunset his men advanced boldly to the charge, but were mowed down by

the terrible concentrated fire of the batteries. The hill swarmed with infantry as well, sheltered by fences and ravines, while shells from the gunboats in James River could reach every part of the confederate line. Yet not till nine in the evening did Lee let the useless carnage cease. Badly demoralized as the opposing army was, McClellan at midnight withdrew to Harrison's Landing, farther down the James.

During the Seven Days' Retreat he had lost fifteen thousand men; the Confederates somewhat more. Military authorities unite in pronouncing McClellan's change of base "brilliantly executed;" but the campaign as a whole was a failure, discouraging the country as much as Bull Run had done. McClellan prepared and fully expected to move on Richmond again from this new base, but early in August received orders to withdraw from the Peninsula. By the middle of the month the dejected Army of the Potomac was on its way north.

The last of June the Union forces in West Virginia, the Shenandoah Valley, and in front of Washington were consolidated into one army, and the same General Pope who had recently won laurels by the conquest of Island Number Ten, put in command. His headquarters, he announced, were to be in the saddle, and those who had criticised McClellan gave out that the Union army's days of retreating were past. McClellan was called from the Peninsula to strengthen this new movement.

Lee started north to crush Pope before McClel-

lan should reach him. Pope had but fifty thousand men against Lee's eighty thousand, and fell back across the Rappahannock. Lee sent Jackson on a far detour, via Thoroughfare Gap, to get into his rear and cut his communications. Jackson moved rapidly around to Manassas—one of the most brilliant exploits in all the war—and destroyed Pope's immense supply depot there. On August 29th he was attacked by Pope near the old battle-field of Bull Run. The first day's fight was indecisive, but confederate re-enforcements under Longstreet arrived in time to join in the battle of the next. McClellan was in no hurry to re-enforce his rival, but proposed "to leave Pope to get out of his scrape as he might." Toward sunset in the battle of the 30th, Longstreet's column, doubling way around Jackson's right and Pope's left, made a grand charge, taking Pope straight in the flank. Porter's corps—the Fifth—part of McClellan's army, stood in the "bloody angle" of cross-fire. His loss was dreadful—two thousand out of nine thousand. Pope was compelled to retire to Centreville. An engagement at Chantilly, September 1st, forced a further retreat to Washington. Pope resigned, and his army was merged in the Army of the Potomac, McClellan commanding all.

Lee now invaded Maryland with sixty thousand men. Already the alarmed North heard him knocking at its gates. Hastily re-organizing the army, McClellan gave chase. Leaving a force to hold Turner's Gap in South Mountain, Lee pushed on toward Pennsylvania. By the Battle of South Mountain, September 14th, Hooker got

possession of the gap, and the Union army poured through. Seeing that he must fight, Lee took up a position on Antietam Creek, a few miles north of Harper's Ferry. Jackson had just received the surrender of the latter place, with eleven thousand prisoners, and now hurried to join Lee.

By the night of September 16th, the two armies were in battle array on either side of the creek. To the rear of the confederate left lay a cultivated area encircled by woods, a cornfield in its centre. At dawn on the 17th, Hooker opened the battle by a furious charge against the confederate left, and tumbled the enemy out of the woods, across the cornfield, and into the thickets beyond, where he was fronted by confederate reserves. The carnage was terrific. Re-enforcements under Mansfield were sent to Hooker, but driven back across the cornfield. Mansfield was killed and Hooker borne from the field wounded, Sumner coming up barely in time to prevent a rout. Once more the Confederates were pushed through the cornfield into the woods. Here, crouching behind natural breastworks — limestone ridges waist-high — the southern ranks delivered so hot a fire as to repulse Sumner's men. Thus, all the morning and into the afternoon the tide of battle surged back and forth through the bloody cornfield, strewn with wounded and dead.

On the confederate right no action took place till late in the day. Burnside then attacked and gained some slight advantage. But re-enforcements from Harper's Ferry came up and were put in against him, forcing him back to the creek.

During the next day McClellan feared to risk a battle. Being re-enforced, he intended to attack on the following morning; but Lee, who should have been crushed, having but forty thousand men to McClellan's eighty-seven thousand, slipped away in the night and got safely across the Potomac. The Union loss was twelve thousand four hundred; that of the Confederates probably about the same.

The general dissatisfaction with McClellan's slowness caused his removal early in November, Burnside succeeding him. The new commander, who, as the head of the army, was an amiable failure, proposed to move directly against Richmond, but Lee flung himself in his path at Fredericksburg.

Fredericksburg lies on the south bank of the Rappahannock. Behind the city is a gradually ascending plain, bounded by heights which bend toward the river. Lee's army, eighty thousand strong, lay in a semicircle along these heights, its wings touching the river above and below the town. Two rows of batteries, planted on the heights, swept the plain in front and flank. A sunken road, sheltered by a stone wall, ran along the base of the declivity. Burnside's army of one hundred and twenty-five thousand men occupied a range of hills on the north side of the river.

Lee's position was very strong; but the country was impatient for action, and Burnside too readily and without any definite plan gave the order to attack. December 11th and 12th were spent in

crossing the river on pontoon bridges. The ominous 13th came. The first charge was made by five thousand of Franklin's men against the confederate right. The attacking column broke through the lines and reached the heights; but it was not supported and confederate reserves drove it back.

About noon an attack was made by Hancock's and French's corps against the confederate left. They advanced over the plain in two lines, one behind the other. Suddenly the batteries in front, to left, to right, poured upon them a murderous fire. Great gaps were mowed in their ranks. Union batteries, replying from across the river, added horror to the din, but helped little. Still the lines swept on. They grew thinner and thinner, halted, broke, and fled.

Again they advanced, this time almost up to the stone wall. Behind it, hidden from sight, lay gray ranks four deep. Suddenly that silent wall burst into flame, and the advancing lines crumbled away more rapidly than before. Three times more the gallant fellows came on, bayonets fixed, to useless slaughter. That deadly wall could not be passed.

The two wings having failed, the Union centre, under Fighting Joe Hooker, was ordered to try. He kept his batteries playing till sunset, hoping to make a breach. Four thousand men were then ordered into the jaws of death. Stripping off knapsacks and overcoats, and relying on the bayonet alone, they charged on the double-quick and with a cheer. They got within twenty yards of the stone wall. Again that sheet of flame! In fifteen minutes it was all over, and they returned as

rapidly as they advanced, leaving nearly half their number dead and dying behind. During the day Burnside had had 113,000 men either across the river or ready to cross. Lee's force was 78,000.

Night put an end to the luckless carnage. Burnside's generals dissuaded him from renewing the attack next day, and the army re-crossed the river. They had lost 12,300 men; the Confederates 5,000. A writer to the London *Times* from Lee's headquarters called this December 13th a day "memorable to the historian of the Decline and Fall of the American Republic."

Burnside resigned in January, and Hooker took the command, but he did not assume the offensive till the last of April. Then, leaving three corps under Sedgwick to deceive Lee by a demonstration in front, he marched upstream with the other four of his corps, crossed the Rappahannock and the Rapidan, partially turned Lee's left, and took up a position near Chancellorsville. It was a perfect plan, and thus far triumphantly executed. But here Hooker waited and the pause was fatal. On the night of April 30th Lee perceived that Sedgwick's movement was only a feint, and gathered all his forces, 62,000 strong, to fight at Chancellorsville. He fortified himself so firmly that Hooker with 64,000, or, including Sedgwick's two corps and the cavalry, 113,000, made not a single step of further advance.

Nor was this the worst. Hooker's right wing, under Howard, was weakly posted. On the 2d of May Stonewall Jackson, who cherished the theory that one man in an enemy's rear is worth

ten in his front, making a detour of fifteen miles, got upon Howard's right unobserved, and rolled it up. The surprise was as complete as it was inexcusable. Arms were stacked and the men getting supper. Suddenly some startled deer came bounding into camp, gray-coats swarming from the woods hard behind. Almost at the first charge the whole corps broke and fled. But the victory cost the Confederates dear; Jackson was fatally wounded, probably by his own men.

All the next day the Union army fought on the defensive. Hooker was stunned in the course of it by a cannon-ball stroke upon the house-pillar against which he was leaning, and the army was left without a commanding mind. Sedgwick, who was to come up from below Fredericksburg and take Lee in the rear, found it impossible to do this in time, having to fight his way forward with great loss. When he drew near Lee was enough at leisure to attend to him. Forty thousand troops, aching for the fray, were left idle while Lee was hammering away against the portion of the Union line commanded by Sickles. Ammunition gave out and charge after charge had to be repulsed with the bayonet.

Sickles's brave men at last yielded. The confederate attack of May 4th was nearly all directed against Sedgwick, whose noble corps narrowly escaped capture. That night the whole army fell back to nearly its old position north of the Rappahannock. Except that at Fredericksburg it was the most disgraceful fiasco on either side during the war. It cost 17,000 men, and accomplished

less than nothing. The South was elated. It proposed again to invade the North and this time dictate terms of peace.

Early in June Lee's jubilant army, strengthened to 100,000, with 15,000 cavalry and 280 guns, started on its second grand Northern Campaign. It marched down the Shenandoah Valley, crossed the Potomac on the 25th, and headed for Chambersburg, Penn. The Army of the Potomac marched parallel with it, on the east side of the Blue Ridge, and crossed the Potomac a day later. Hooker suddenly resigned and Meade was put in command.

Lee reached Chambersburg; his advance even pushed well on toward Harrisburg, the capital of Pennsylvania. At Chambersburg he waited eagerly for those riots in northern cities by which the "copperheads" had expected to aid his march. In vain. Meade was drawing near. "Pressed by the finger of destiny, the confederate army went down to Gettysburg," and here the advance of both hosts met on July 1st. After some sharp fighting the Union van was driven back in confusion through Gettysburg, with a loss of ten thousand men, half of them prisoners. The brave General Reynolds, commanding the First Corps, lost his life in this action. The residue fell back to Cemetery Hill, south of the town. Meade, fifteen miles to the south, sent Hancock on to take command of the field, and see what it was best to do. This able and trusty officer hurried to the scene of action in an ambulance, studying maps as he went. He saw at a glance the strength of

Cemetery Ridge and resolved to retreat no farther. The remaining corps were ordered up, and by noon of July 2d had mostly taken their positions.

The Union army lay along an elevation some three miles in length, resembling a fish-hook in shape. At the extreme southern end, forming the head of the shank, rose "Round Top," four hundred feet in height. Farther north was "Little Round Top," about three-fourths as high. Cemetery Ridge formed the rest of the shank. The hook curved to the east, with Culp's Hill for the barb. The confederate army occupied Seminary Ridge a mile to the west, its left wing, however, bending around to the east through Gettysburg, the line being nearly parallel with Meade's, but much longer. Each army numbered not far from eighty thousand.

The battle of the second day began about three in the afternoon. Meade had neglected to occupy Little Round Top, which was the key to the Union line. Longstreet's men began climbing its rugged sides. Fortunately the movement was seen in time, and Union troops, after a most desperate conflict, seized and held the crest of the hill.

Along the Union left centre General Sickles's corps had taken a position in advance of the rest of the line, upon a ridge branching off from Cemetery Ridge at an acute angle. Here he was fiercely attacked and most of his force finally driven back into the line of Cemetery Ridge. The Union right had been greatly weakened to strengthen the centre. The Confederates charged here also, and

carried the outer intrenchments at Culp's Hill. The Union losses during the afternoon were ten thousand—three-fifths in Sickles's corps, which lost half its numbers.

The next morning was spent by Lee in preparing for a grand charge upon the Union centre, that of yesterday upon the left having failed, and the Confederates having this morning been driven from the ground gained the night before on the right at Culp's Hill. The storm burst about one o'clock. For two hours one hundred and twenty guns on Seminary Ridge kept up a furious cannonade, to which Meade replied with eighty. About three the Union cannon ceased firing. Lee mistakenly thought them silenced, and gave the word to charge.

An attacking column eighteen thousand strong, made up of fresh troops, the flower of Lee's men, and commanded by the impetuous Pickett, the Ney of the southern army, emerges from the woods on Seminary Ridge, and, drawn up in three lines, one behind the other, with a front of more than a mile, moves silently down the slope and across the valley toward the selected spot. Suddenly the Union batteries again open along the whole line. Great furrows are ploughed in the advancing ranks. They press steadily on, and climb the slope toward Meade's lines. Two regiments behind rude intrenchments slightly in advance pour in such a murderous fire that the column swerves a little toward its left, exposing its flank. General Stannard and his lusty Vermonters make an irresistible charge upon this.

Windrows of Pickett's poor fellows are mowed down by the combined artillery and musketry fire. A part of the column breaks and flees. A part rushes on with desperate valor and reaches the low stone wall which serves for a Union breastwork. A venomous hand to hand fight ensues. Union re-enforcements swarm to the endangered point. The three confederate brigade commanders are all killed or fatally wounded, whole regiments of their followers surrounded and taken prisoners. The rest are tumbled back, and the broken remnants of that noble column flee in wild confusion across the valley.

The confederate loss on this eventful day was sixteen thousand, the Union loss not one-fifth as great. General Hancock, whose command bore the brunt of the charge, was severely wounded. Meade should have pressed his advantage, but did not, and next day Lee retreated under cover of a storm and escaped across the Potomac. His losses during the three days had been frightful, amounting to 23,000. In one brigade, numbering 2,800 on July 1st, only 835 answered roll-call three days later. Meade's total losses were also 23,000. Meade had had on the field in all 83,000 men and 300 guns, Lee 69,000 and 250 guns.

Gettysburg marks the turning of the tide. The South's dream of getting a foothold in the North was forever past. She was soon to hear a gallant Northerner's voice demanding the surrender of Richmond.

CHAPTER VIII.

COLLAPSE OF THE CONFEDERACY

GETTYSBURG was the last general engagement in the East during 1863. The next spring, as we have noticed, Grant was appointed Lieutenant-General, with command of all the northern armies, now numbering over six hundred thousand effectives. This vast body of men he proposed to use against the fast-weakening Confederacy in concerted movements. Sherman's part in the great plan has already been traced. The hardest task, that of facing Lee, the hero of Vicksburg and Chattanooga reserved for himself. Greek thus met Greek, and the death-grapple began.

May 4th the Army of the Potomac crossed the Rapidan and entered the Wilderness, Meade in immediate command, with 120,000 men present for duty. Lee, heading an army of 62,000 veterans, engaged his new antagonist without delay. For two days the battle raged in the gloomy woods. There was no opportunity for brilliant manœuvres. The men of the two armies lay doggedly behind the trees, each blazing away through the underbrush at an unseen foe, often but a few yards off, while a stream of mangled forms borne on stretchers came steadily pouring to the rear.

The tide of battle surged this way and that, with no decisive advantage for either side.

But Grant, as Lee said of him, "was not a retreating man." If he had not beaten, neither had he been beaten. Advance was the word. On the night of the 7th he began that series of "movements by the left flank" which was to force Lee forever from the Rappahannock front. The army stretched nearly north and south, facing west. Warren's corps, at the extreme right, quietly withdrew from the enemy's front, and marching south took a position beyond Hancock's, hitherto the left. Sedgwick's corps followed. By this sidling movement the army worked its way south, all the while presenting an unbroken front to the enemy. Yet, on reaching Spottsylvania, Grant found Lee's army there before him. Sharp fighting began again on the 9th and continued three days, but was indecisive, mainly from the wild nature of the country, heavily timbered, with only occasional clearings.

An early morning attack on the 12th carried a salient angle in the centre of the confederate line, securing 4,000 prisoners and twenty guns. All that day and far into the night Lee desperately strove to dislodge the assailants from this "bloody angle." Five furious charges were stubbornly repulsed, the belligerents between these grimly facing each other from lines of rifle-pits often but a few feet apart. Bullets flew thick as hail, a tree eighteen inches through being cut clean off by them. Great heaps of dead and wounded lay between the lines, and "at times a lifted arm or a

quivering limb told of an agony not quenched by the Lethe of death around." Lee did not give up this death-grapple till three o'clock in the morning, when he fell back to a new position. His losses here in killed and wounded were about 5,000; Grant's about 6,000.

Rains now compelled both armies to remain quiet for several days. Meantime news reached Grant that Butler, who was to have moved up the James with his army of twenty thousand and co-operate with the main army against Richmond, had suffered himself to be "bottled up" at Bermuda Hundred, a narrow spit of land between the James and Appomattox Rivers, the Confederates having "driven in the cork." Re-enforcements reached Grant, however, which made good all his losses.

On the 19th, after an unsuccessful assault the day before, he resumed the flanking movement, and reached and passed the North Anna. But Lee pushed in like a wedge between the two parts of the Union army, separated by crossing the river at different points, and after some fighting, Grant re-crossed and resumed his march to the south. Lee, again moving on shorter lines, reached Cold Harbor before Grant.

The outer line of confederate intrenchments at Cold Harbor was carried on June 1st, and at early dawn on the 3d a charge made along the whole front. Under cover of a heavy artillery fire the men advanced to the enemy's rifle-pits and carried them. They then swept on toward the main line. The ground was open and the advancing columns

were exposed to a terrible storm of iron and lead. Artillery cross-fire swept through their ranks from right to left. The troops pressed close up to the works but could not carry them. They intrenched, however, and held the position gained, at some points within thirty yards of the hostile ramparts. The Union loss was very heavy, not less than six thousand; the Confederates, fighting under shelter, lost comparatively few.

During the next ten days the men lay quietly in their trenches. Both forces had now moved so far south that Grant's hope of getting between Lee's army and Richmond had to be abandoned. He therefore decided to cross the James and take a position south of Richmond, whence he could threaten its lines of communication, while that river would furnish him a secure base of supplies.

The two hosts now began a race for Petersburg, an important railway centre, twenty-two miles south of Richmond. Grant's advance reached the town first, but delayed earnest attack, and on the morning of the 15th Lee's veterans, after an all-night's march, flung themselves into the intrenchments. Grant spent the next four days in vain efforts to dislodge them. On the 19th he gave up the method of assault, and began a regular siege. His losses in killed and wounded hereabouts had been almost nine thousand.

Things now remained comparatively quiet till late in July. Both sides were busy strengthening their intrenchments. Lee held both Richmond and Petersburg in force, besides a continuous line between the two. Attempts to break this line and

to cut the railroads around Petersburg led to several engagements which would have been considered great battles earlier in the war.

Grant's total losses from the crossing of the Rapidan to the end of June were 61,000, but reenforcements promptly filled his ranks. The confederate loss cannot be accurately determined, but was probably about two-thirds as great.

Through July one of Burnside's regiments, composed of Pennsylvanians used to such business, had been working at a mine under one of the main redoubts in front of Petersburg. A shaft five hundred feet long was dug, with a cross gallery eighty feet in length at the end square under the redoubt. This chamber was charged with eight thousand pounds of powder, which was fired July 30th. The battery and brigade immediately overhead were blown into the air, and the confederate soldiers far to left and right stunned and stupefied with terror. For half an hour the way into Petersburg was open. Why did none enter? The answer is sad.

Grant had splendidly fulfilled his part by a feint to Deep Bottom across the James, which had drawn thither all but about one division of Lee's Petersburg force. But Meade, at a late hour on the 29th, changed the entire plan of assault, which Burnside had carefully arranged, and to lead which a fresh division had been specially drilled. Then there was lamentable inefficiency or cowardice on the part of several subordinate officers. The troops charged into the great, cellar-like crater, twenty-five feet deep, where, for lack of orders, they re-

mained huddled together instead of pushing on. The Confederates rallied, and after shelling the crater till more of its occupants were dead than alive, charged and either routed the living or took them prisoners.

During the summer and fall of 1864 the scene of active operations was shifted to the Shenandoah Valley. The latter part of June Lee sent Early, twenty thousand strong, to make a demonstration against Washington, hoping to scare Grant away from Petersburg. Early moved rapidly down the valley, hustling Hunter before him, who escaped only by making a detour to the west, thus leaving Washington open. Thither Early pushed with all speed.

General Lew Wallace hastily gathered up the few troops at his disposal and hurried out from Baltimore to meet him. Wallace was defeated at the Monocacy River, July 9th, but precious time was gained for the strengthening of Washington. When Early arrived before the city on the 11th, Grant's re-enforcements had not yet come, and the fate of the capital trembled in the balance. Early happily delayed his attack till the morrow, and that night two of Grant's veteran corps landed in Washington, President Lincoln, in his anxiety, being on the wharf to meet them. Once more Washington was safe, and Early fell back, pressed by the new-comers.

The pursuit was feeble, however, and the last of July Early swooped down the valley again. A detachment pushed into Pennsylvania and burned Chambersburg. All through the war the confed-

erate operations in the Shenandoah Valley had been an annoyance and a menace. Grant now determined to put a definite stop to this, and sent the dashing General Sheridan for the work with thirty thousand troops, including eight thousand cavalry. Sheridan pushed Early up the Shenandoah, defeating him at Opequon Creek, September 19th, and at Fisher's Hill two days later.

One-half of Early's army had been destroyed or captured, and the rest driven southward. Sheridan then, in accordance with Grant's orders, that the enemy might no longer make it a base of operations against the capital, laid waste the valley so thoroughly that, as the saying went, not a crow could fly up or down it without carrying rations. Spite of this, Early, having been re-enforced, entered the valley once more. The Union army lay at Cedar Creek. Sheridan had gone to Washington on business, leaving General Wright in command. On the night of October 18th, the wily confederate crept around to the rear of the Union left, and attacked at daybreak. Wright was completely surprised, and his left wing fled precipitately, losing one thousand prisoners and eighteen guns. He ordered a retreat to Winchester. The right fell slowly back in good order, interposing a steady front between Early and the demoralized left.

Meanwhile Sheridan, who had reached Winchester on his return, snuffed battle, and hurried to the scene. Now came "Sheridan's Ride." Astride the coal-black charger immortalized by Buchanan Read's verse, he shot ahead and dashed

upon the battle-field shortly before noon, his horse dripping with foam. His presence restored confidence, and the army steadily awaited the expected assault. It came, was repulsed, was reciprocated. Early was halted, then pushed, then totally routed, and his army nearly destroyed. It was one of the most signal and telling victories of the war. In a month's campaign Sheridan had killed and wounded ten thousand of the enemy and taken thirteen thousand prisoners.

All this time the siege of Petersburg was sturdily pressed. In August, Grant got possession of the Weldon Railroad, an important line running south from Petersburg. During the next month fortifications on the Richmond side of the James were carried and held. Through the winter Grant contented himself with gradually extending his lines around Petersburg, trying to cut Lee's communications, and preventing his sending troops against Sherman. He had a death-grip upon the Confederacy's throat, and waited with confidence for the contortions which should announce its death.

The spring of 1865 found the South reduced to the last extremity. The blockade had shut out imports, and it is doubtful if ever before so large and populous a region was so far from being self-sustaining. Even of food-products, save corn and bacon, the dearth became desperate. Wheat bread and salt were luxuries almost from the first. Home-made shoes, with wooden soles and uppers cut from buggy tops or old pocketbooks, became the fashion. Pins were eagerly picked up in the

streets. Thorns, with wax heads, served as hairpins. Scraps of old metal became precious as gold.

The plight of the army was equally distressing. Drastic drafting had long since taken into the army all the able-bodied men between the ages of eighteen and forty-five. Boys from fourteen to eighteen, and old men from forty-five to sixty, were also pressed into service as junior and senior reserves, the Confederacy thus, as General Butler wittily said, "robbing both the cradle and the grave." Lee's army had been crumbling away beneath the terrible blows dealt it by Grant. He received some re-enforcements during 1864, but in no wise enough to make good his losses. When he took the field in the spring of 1865, his total effective force was 57,000. Grant's army, including Butler's and Sheridan's troops, numbered 125,000.

Lee now perceived that his only hope lay in escaping from the clutches of Grant and making a junction with Johnston's army in North Carolina. Grant was on the watch for precisely this. On March 29th Sheridan worked around into the rear of the confederate right. Lee descried the movement, and extended his lines that way to obviate it. A force was sent, which drove Sheridan back in some confusion. Re-enforced, he again advanced and beat the forces opposed to him rearward to Five Forks. Here, April 1st, he made a successful charge, before which the foe broke and ran, leaving forty-five hundred prisoners.

Fearing an attack on Sheridan in force which

might let Lee out, Grant sent re-enforcements, at the same time keeping up a roaring cannonade along the whole line all night. At five on the morning of the 2d, a grand assault was made against the confederate left, which had been weakened to extend the right. The outer intrenchments, with two forts farther in, were taken. Lee at once telegraphed to President Davis that Petersburg and Richmond must be immediately abandoned.

It was Sunday, and the message reached Mr. Davis in church. He hastened out with pallid lips and unsteady tread. A panic-stricken throng was soon streaming from the doomed city. Vehicles let for $100 an hour in gold. The state-prison guards fled and the criminals escaped. A drunken mob surged through the streets, smashing windows and plundering shops. General Ewell blew up the ironclads in the river and burned bridges and storehouses. The fire spread till one-third of Richmond was in flames. The air was filled with a "hideous mingling of the discordant sounds of human voices—the crying of children, the lamentations of women, the yells of drunken men — with the roar of the tempest of flame, the explosion of magazines, the bursting of shells." Early on the morning of the 3d was heard the cry, "The Yankees are coming!" Soon a column of blue-coated troops poured into the city, headed by a regiment of colored cavalry, and the Stars and Stripes presently floated over the confederate capital.

The Confederacy was tottering to its fall. Lee

had begun his retreat on the night of the 2d, and was straining every nerve to reach a point on the railroad fifty miles to the west, whence he could move south and join Johnston. Grant was too quick for him. Sending Sheridan in advance to head him off, he himself hurried after with the main army. Gray and blue kept up the race for several days, moving on nearly parallel lines. Sheridan struck the confederate column at Sailor's Creek on the 6th, and a heavy engagement ensued, in which the southern army lost many wagons and several thousand prisoners.

Lee's band was in a pitiable plight. Its supplies had been cut off, and many of the soldiers had nothing to eat except the young shoots of trees. They fell out of the ranks by hundreds, and deserted to their homes near by. With all hope of escape cut off, and his army dropping to pieces around him, Lee was at last forced to surrender. To this end he met Grant, on April 9th, at a residence near Appomattox Court House.

The personal appearance of the two generals at this interview presented a striking, not to say ludicrous, contrast. Lee, who was a tall, handsome man, was attired in a new uniform, showing all the insignia of his rank, with a splendid dress-sword at his side. Grant, wholly unprepared for the interview, wore a private's uniform, covered with mud and dust from hard riding that day. His shoulder-straps were the only mark of his high rank, and he had no sword. Having served together in the Mexican War, they spent some time in a friendly conversation about those

old scenes. Grant then wrote out the terms of surrender, which Lee accepted. The troops were to give their paroles not to take up arms again until properly exchanged, and officers might retain their side-arms, private horses, and baggage. Anxious to heal the wounds of the South, Grant, with rare thoughtfulness, allowed privates also to take home their own horses. "They will need them for the spring ploughing," he said. The 19,000 prisoners captured during the last ten days, together with deserters, left, in Lee's once magnificent army, but 28,356 soldiers to be paroled. The surrendering general was compelled to ask 25,000 rations for these famished troops, a request which was cheerfully granted.

While all loyal hearts were rejoicing over the news of Lee's surrender, recognized as virtually ending the war, a pall suddenly fell upon the land. On the evening of April 14th, while President Lincoln was sitting in a box at Ford's Theatre in Washington, an actor, John Wilkes Booth, crept up behind him, placed a pistol to his head, and fired. Brandishing his weapon, and crying, "*sic sẽmper tyrannis*," the assassin leaped to the stage, sustaining a severe injury. Regaining his feet, he shouted, "The South is avenged!" and made his escape.

The bullet had pierced the President's brain and rendered him insensible. He was removed to a house near by, where he died next morning. His body was taken to Springfield, Ill., for burial, and a nation mourned above his grave, as no American since Washington had ever been mourned for be-

fore. The South repudiated and deplored the foul deed. Well it might, for, had Lincoln lived, much of its sorrow during the next years would have been avoided.

Booth was only one of a band of conspirators who had intended also to take off General Grant and the whole Cabinet. By a strange good fortune Secretary Seward, sick in bed, was the only victim besides the President. He was stabbed three times with a bowie-knife, but not fatally. After a cunning flight and brave defence Booth was captured near Port Royal, and killed. Of the other conspirators some were hanged, some imprisoned.

The Confederacy collapsed. Johnston's army surrendered to Sherman on April 26th. President Davis fled south. On May 10th he was captured in Georgia, muffled in a lady's cloak and shawl, and became a prisoner at Fortress Monroe. The war had called into military (land) service in the two armies together hardly fewer than 4,000,000 men; two and three-fourths millions, in round numbers, on the Union side, and one and a fourth million on the other. The largest number of northern soldiers in actual service at any one time was 1,000,516, on May 1, 1865, 650,000 of them being able for duty. The largest number of confederate land forces in service at any time was 690,000, on January 1, 1863. The Union armies lost by death 304,369 — 44,238 of these being killed in battle, 49,205 dying of wounds. Over 26,000 are known to have died in confederate prisons.

CHAPTER IX.

THE WAR ON THE SEA

NAVAL operations during the war fall into three great classes: Those upon inland waters, the Mississippi especially; those along the coast; and those upon the high seas. The first class has already been touched upon in connection with the Mississippi campaigns. The naval work along the coast and upon the high seas is the subject of the present chapter. Only the more important features can be sketched. At the outbreak of the Rebellion our navy was totally unprepared for war. Forty-two vessels were in commission, but most of them were in distant seas or in southern ports. The service was weak with secession sentiment. Between March and July, 1861, two hundred and fifty-nine naval officers resigned or were dismissed.

Secretary Welles went energetically to work. Vessels in foreign waters were called home, the keels of new craft laid in northern dockyards, and stout merchant ships bought and fitted up for the rough usage of war. By the end of 1861 the navy numbered 264 vessels. At the close of the war it had 671 ships, carrying 4,610 guns and 50,000 sailors.

The first work—a gigantic one—was to blockade the southern ports. This involved the constant patrolling of more than three thousand miles of dangerous coast, indented with innumerable inlets, sounds, and bays. But within a year a fairly effective blockade was in force from Virginia to Texas, drawn tighter and tighter as the navy increased in size. The effectiveness of the blockade is sufficiently proved by the dearth at the South. The South had cotton enough to sell—$300,000,000 worth in gold at the end of the war—and Europe was greedy to buy; but she could not get her wares to market. Fifteen hundred prizes, worth $30,000,000, were taken during the war.

The details of the blockade must be left to the reader's imagination. Important as the work was, it was comparatively monotonous and dull—ceaseless watching day and night in all weather, week after week and month after month. Now and then the routine would be broken by the excitement of a chase. A suspicious-looking sail would be spied in the offing and pursued, perhaps, far out to sea. Again, the low hull of a blockade-runner would be seen creeping around a point and heading for the open sea. Or on a still night the throb of engines and the splash of paddle-wheels would give warning that some guilty vessel was trying to steal into port under cover of darkness. Then came the flare of rockets to notify the rest of the blockading fleet, the hot pursuit with boilers crowded to bursting, the boom of the big guns fired at random in the dark, and the exultation of a capture or the disappointment of failure.

Blockade-running became a regular business, enormously profitable. Moonless and cloudy nights were of course the most favorable times for eluding the blockade; but the swift steamers, sitting low in the water and painted a light neutral tint, could not easily be detected by day at a little distance, especially as they burned smokeless coal. The bolder skippers would take all chances. Under cover of a fog they would steal into or out of harbor at risk of going aground, or set sail boldly on a bright moonlight night, when the blockaders would naturally relax their vigilance a little. Occasionally some dare-devil would crowd on all steam and dash openly through the sentinel fleet, trusting to speed to escape being hit or captured. When hard pressed, the blockade-runner would beach his craft, set it afire, and take to the woods. At the close of the war thirty wrecks of blockade-runners were rotting on the sands near Charleston Harbor.

In connection with the blockade a number of naval expeditions were sent against various points along the coast. In October, 1861, a fleet under Flag-Officer Dupont, consisting of a steam frigate, a dozen or more gunboats, with numerous transports and coaling-schooners, and carrying 12,000 troops under General T. W. Sherman, set sail from Hampton Roads for Port Royal, S. C. After a stormy passage the fleet anchored off the harbor on November 4th. On opposite sides of the entrance, two and a half miles apart, stood Forts Walker and Beauregard — strong earthworks, mounting one twenty-three the other twenty guns,

and garrisoned by 1,700 men. The 7th dawned bright and clear, the sea smooth as glass. About nine o'clock the bombardment began. The fleet steamed slowly round and round in an ellipse between the forts, each vessel as it came within range pouring in its fire, then passing on and waiting its turn to fire again. The cannonade was concentrated upon Fort Walker. The moving ships offered a poor mark to the fort, while the aim of the fleet was very accurate, covering the gunners with sand and dismounting the guns. After four hours' action Fort Walker was evacuated, and soon Fort Beauregard also in consequence.

Port Royal was the finest harbor on the coast, and was of great value to the navy all through the war as a repair and supply station. Dupont sent out expeditions, and by the end of the year had possession of a large part of the coast of South Carolina and Georgia. In the following spring expeditions from Port Royal regained Fernandina and St. Augustine on the Florida coast. In April Fort Pulaski, a strong brick work at the mouth of the Savannah River, was reduced by eleven batteries planted on a neighboring island, its surrender completing the blockade of Savannah.

Albemarle and Pamlico Sounds, on the coast of North Carolina, swarmed with blockade-runners. Rivers, canals, and railroads formed a network of communications with the interior, and vessels were constantly slipping to sea with cargoes of cotton, to return with munitions of war. Hatteras Inlet, seized in August, 1861, was not a sufficient basis for the blockade. In February, 1862, a fleet

bearing 11,500 soldiers, under General Burnside, arrived at Roanoke Island, which lies between the two great sounds. The troops were landed, and on the 8th, charging over marshy ground, sometimes waist-deep in water, carried the batteries and gained possession of the island. Newbern, one of the most important ports of North Carolina, was captured a month later, and Fort Macon, commanding the entrance to Beaufort Harbor, surrendered in April.

Meanwhile what had the Confederates been doing in naval matters? When the Norfolk navy-yard was abandoned in April, 1861, the fine old frigate Merrimac was scuttled. She was raised by the Davis Government and converted into an iron-clad ram—a novelty in those days. The hull was cut down to the water's edge, and a stout roof, 170 feet long, with sloping sides and a flat top, built amidships and plated with four inches of iron. This roof was pierced for ten guns—four rifles and six nine-inch smooth-bores.

On March 8, 1862, the Union fleet, consisting of the Cumberland, Congress, Minnesota, and some smaller craft, rode lazily at anchor in Hampton Roads. About noon a curious looking structure was seen coming down Elizabeth River. It was the Merrimac. She steered straight for the Cumberland. The latter poured in a broadside from her heavy ten-inch guns, but the balls glanced off the ram's sloping iron sides like peas. The Merrimac's iron beak crashed into the Cumberland's side, making a great hole. In a few minutes the old war-sloop, working her guns to

the water's edge, went down in fifty-four feet of water, one hundred and twenty sick and wounded sinking with her.

The Congress had meanwhile been run aground. The Merrimac fired hot shot, setting her afire. Nearly half the crew being killed or wounded, she surrendered, her magazine exploding and blowing her up at midnight. The Minnesota, hastening up with two other vessels from Fortress Monroe to aid her sisters, had run aground. Being of heavy draught, the Merrimac could not get near enough to do her much damage, and at nightfall steamed back to her landing. As the telegraph that night flashed over the land the news of the Merrimac's victory, dismay filled the North, exultation the South. What was to stay the career of the invulnerable monster? Could it not destroy the whole United States navy of wooden ships?

Next morning the Merrimac reappeared to complete her work of destruction. As she drew near the stranded Minnesota, a strange little craft moved out from the side of the big frigate and headed straight for the iron-clad. It was Ericsson's Monitor, which had arrived from New York at midnight. The confederate characterization of it as a "cheese-box on a raft" is still the best description of its appearance. Its lower hull, 122 feet long and thirty-four wide, was protected by a raft-like overhanging upper hull, 172 feet long and forty-one wide. Midway upon her low deck, which rose only a foot above the water, stood a revolving turret twenty-one feet in diameter and nine in height. It was made of iron eight inches thick, and bore

two 11-inch guns throwing each a 180-pound ball. Near the bow rose the pilot-house, made of iron logs nine inches by twelve in thickness. The side armor of the hull was five inches thick and the deck was covered with heavy iron plates.

For three hours the iron-clads fought. The Merrimac's shot glanced harmlessly off the round turret, while her attempts to run the Monitor down failed. Meanwhile the big guns in the Monitor's turret, firing every seven minutes, were pounding the ram's sides with terrible blows. The Merrimac's armor was at points crushed in several inches, but nowhere pierced. About noon the fight stopped, as if by mutual consent. It was a drawn battle, but the career of the Merrimac had ended. Upon McClellan's advance, in May, she was blown up. The Monitor received no serious injury in this action, but the next December she foundered in a storm off Cape Hatteras.

The invention of the Monitor revolutionized naval warfare, and set European nations to building the ponderous iron-clad navies of the present day. The United States Government soon contracted for twenty single-turret monitors, and four double-turreted ones with 15-inch guns.

The Confederates now went to building iron-clads on the model of the Merrimac. On the morning of January 31, 1863, the iron-clads Palmetto State and Chicora steamed out of Charleston Harbor, in a dense fog, and attacked the blockading fleet of wooden vessels. After ramming one ship and sending a shot through the boiler of another, they put back to port.

In April, Admiral Dupont tried to seize Charleston Harbor with his fleet of seven monitors and two iron-clads. In a two hours' action the monitors were seriously injured by the heavy guns of the forts, and the fleet withdrew. In August, land batteries reduced Fort Sumter almost to ruins, and in the following month Fort Wagner was abandoned. June 17th, the iron-clad Atlanta, armed with a torpedo at the end of a spar, ran down from Savannah to engage with two monitors guarding the mouth of the river. She got aground, rendering the torpedo useless. The fifteen-inch guns of the monitors pierced her armor, and in a few minutes she surrendered.

The Albemarle proved a more dangerous foe. The last of April, 1864, it descended Roanoke River, smashed the gunboats at the mouth, and compelled the surrender of the forts and the town of Plymouth. A few days later it attacked a fleet of gunboats below the mouth of the river. After a severe tussle, inflicting and receiving considerable damage, it steamed back to Plymouth. Here it lay at the wharf till October, when it was sunk by Lieutenant Cushing, already famous for daring exploits under the very noses of the enemy. On the night of October 27th, young Cushing approached the iron-clad in a steam launch with a torpedo at the end of a spar projecting from the bow. Jumping his boat over the log boom surrounding the ram, in the thick of musketry fire from deck and shore, Cushing calmly worked the strings by which the intricate torpedo was fired. It exploded under the vessel's overhang,

and she soon sunk. At the moment of the explosion a cannon-ball crashed through the launch. Cushing plunged into the river and swam to shore through a shower of bullets. After crawling through the swamps next day, he found a skiff and paddled off to the fleet. Of the launch's crew of fourteen, only one other escaped.

The stronghold of the Confederacy on the Gulf was Mobile. Two strong forts, mounting twenty-seven and forty-seven guns, guarded the channel below the city, which was further defended by spiles and torpedoes. In the harbor, August 5, 1864, lay the iron-clad ram, Tennessee, and three gunboats, commanded by Admiral Buchanan, formerly captain of the Merrimac. Farragut determined to force a passage. Before six o'clock in the morning his fleet of four monitors and fourteen wooden ships, the latter lashed together two and two, got under way, Farragut taking his station in the main rigging of the Hartford. The action opened about seven. One of the monitors struck a torpedo and sunk. The Brooklyn, which was leading, turned back to go around what seemed to be a nest of torpedoes. The whole line was in danger of being huddled together under the fire of the forts. Farragut boldly took the lead and the fleet followed. The torpedo cases could be heard rapping against the ship's bottoms, but none exploded.

The forts being safely passed, the confederate gunboats advanced to the attack. One of these was captured, the other two escaped. The powerful iron-clad Tennessee now moved down upon

the Union fleet. It was two hundred and nine feet long, with armor from five to six inches thick. Farragut ordered his wooden vessels to run her down. Three succeeded in ramming her squarely. She reeled under the tremendous blows, and her gunners could not keep their feet. A monitor sent a fifteen-inch ball through her stern. Her smoke-stack and steering-chains were shot away, and several port shutters jammed. About 10 A.M., after an action of an hour and a quarter, the ram hoisted the white flag. The forts surrendered in a few days.

January 15, 1865, Fort Fisher, a strong work near Wilmington, N. C., mounting seventy-five guns, was captured by a joint land and naval expedition under General Terry and Admiral Porter. This was the last great engagement along the coast.

The story of the war upon the high seas is quickly told. Swift and powerful cruisers were built in English ship-yards, with the connivance of the British Government, whence they sailed to prey upon our commerce. The Florida, Georgia, Shenandoah, Chameleon, and Tallahassee, were some of the most famous in the list of confederate cruisers. During 1861, fifty-eight prizes were taken by them. American merchant vessels were driven from the sea. The Shenandoah alone destroyed over $6,000,000 worth in vessels and cargoes.

The two most celebrated of these sea-rovers were the Sumter and the Alabama, both commanded by Captain Semmes, formerly of the

United States Navy. The Sumter was a screw steamer of six hundred tons, a good sailer and seaboat. She was bought by the Confederate Government and armed with a few heavy guns. On June 30, 1861, she ran the guard below New Orleans, and began scouring the seas. All through the fall she prowled about the Atlantic, taking seventeen prizes, most of which were burned. Many United States cruisers were sent after her, but she eluded or escaped them all. Early in 1862 the Sumter entered the port of Gibraltar. Here she was blockaded by two Union gunboats, and Semmes finally sold her to take command of the Alabama.

The Alabama was built expressly for the Confederacy at Laird's ship-yard, Liverpool, and although her character was perfectly well known, the British Government permitted her to go to sea. She was taken to one of the Azores Islands, where she received her armament and her captain. The officers were confederates, the crew British. She began her destructive career in August, 1862. By the last of October she had taken twenty-seven prizes. In January she sunk the gunboat Hatteras, one of the blockading fleet off Galveston, Tex. After cruising in all seas, the Alabama, in 1864, returned to the European coast, having captured sixty-five vessels and destroyed property worth between $6,000,000 and $7,000,000.

On June 11th, Semmes put into the harbor of Cherbourg, on the coast of France. Captain Winslow, commanding the United States steamer Kearsarge, cruising in the neighborhood, heard of the famous rover's arrival, and took his station outside

the harbor. About ten o'clock on the morning of June 19, 1864, the Alabama was seen coming out of port, attended by a French man-of-war and an English steam yacht. Captain Winslow immediately cleared the decks for action. It was a clear, bright day, with a smooth sea. The fight took place about seven miles from shore. The two ships were pretty equally matched, each being of about one thousand tons burden. The Kearsarge had the heavier smooth-bore guns, but the Alabama carried a 100-pound Blakely rifle. The Kearsarge was protected amidships by chain cables.

The Alabama opened the engagement. The Kearsarge replied with a cool and accurate fire. The action soon grew spirited. Solid shot ricocheted over the smooth water. Shells crashed against the sides or exploded on deck. The two ships sailed round and round a common centre, keeping about half a mile apart. In less than an hour the Alabama was terribly shattered and began to sink. She tried to escape, but water put out her engine fires. Semmes hoisted the white flag. In a few minutes the Alabama went down, her bow rising high in the air. Boats from the Kearsarge rescued some of the crew. The English yacht picked up others, Semmes among them, thus running off with Winslow's prisoners. The Kearsarge had received little damage.

The sinking of the Alabama ended the career of the confederate cruisers. American commerce had been nearly driven from the ocean, and, moreover, the days of peace on land and sea alike were near at hand.

CHAPTER X.

FOREIGN RELATIONS—FINANCES—EMANCIPATION

A CIVIL war of vast proportions in the world's greatest republic naturally aroused deep interest among the monarchies of Europe. Russia evinced warm friendliness to the United States. The rest of the world, save England and France, showed us no ill-will.

England, with unfriendly haste, admitted the belligerent rights of the Confederacy before Mr. Adams, our minister, could reach the British court. The North was surprised and shocked that liberty-loving, conservative England should so far side with "rebellious slave-holders." It would seem that, besides sympathy with the aristocratic structure of southern society, national envy helped to put England into this false position. Commercial interests had greater weight. Four millions of people in England depended upon cotton manufactures for support. Three-fourths of the cotton they had used came from our southern ports, which the blockade closed. Moreover, the Confederacy declared for free trade, while the North adopted a high war tariff which drove many English goods out of American markets. The London *Times* complained that nearly four

million dollars' worth of English cutlery alone had been made worthless by our tariff.

An incident early in the war heightened the ill-will between the two countries. On a dark night in October, 1861, Messrs. Mason and Slidell, confederate commissioners to England and France, ran the blockade at Charleston, and soon after took passage at Havana on the English mail steamer Trent. November 8th, two hundred and fifty miles out from Havana, the United States sloop of war San Jacinto, Captain Wilkes, compelled the Trent, by a shot across her bows, to heave to, and took off the commissioners.

All England was hot with resentment. Troops were shipped to Canada, and other war preparations begun. A special messenger was hurried to Washington, demanding an apology and the release of the prisoners. Wilkes's action, though without authority in international law, was warmly approved by the people. The House of Representatives tendered him a vote of thanks. But the Government disavowed the seizure and gave up the commissioners. Mr. Seward, Secretary of State, in a dignified reply to England, insisted that the seizure was fully justified by England's own practice of searching neutral vessels on the high seas; but that, as the United States had always condemned this practice, the prisoners would be released, especially as Captain Wilkes should have brought the Trent before a prize court instead of deciding the validity of the prize himself. The action of the Government, though unpopular at the time, was undoubtedly as prudent as it was

just. We could not afford to provoke war with England.

Our real grievance against Great Britain was that the Queen's proclamation of neutrality was not obeyed. Confederate cruisers were built in English yards, whence they publicly and boastfully sailed to prey upon our then vast merchant marine. Crews as well as ships were English. The British ministry were perfectly aware of their destination, but used all manner of artifices to avoid interfering.

Our most vicious enemy abroad was Napoleon III., so profuse yet so hypocritical in his professions of good-will. He, too, hastened to accord belligerent rights to the Confederacy. Had England not been too wary to join him, the two nations would certainly have recognized the South's independence. Napoleon was on the point of doing this alone. Seven war-vessels were, with his sanction, built for the Confederates at Bordeaux and Nantes, though he was too wily to allow them to sail when he became aware that their destination was fully known to our minister.

Far-reaching political schemes were at the bottom of Napoleon's wish for a dismembered Union. He was plotting to restore European influence in America by setting up an empire on the ruins of the Mexican republic, and he knew that the United States would never allow this while her power was unbroken. In the latter part of 1861 a French army invaded Mexico. The feeble government was overthrown after a year or two of fighting. In 1863 an empire was established, and Napoleon

offered the throne to the Austrian archduke Maximilian. Meanwhile, the protests of the United States were disregarded. But when our hands were freed by the collapse of the Confederacy, Napoleon changed his tone. The French troops were withdrawn early in 1867, and Maximilian was left to his fate. The unhappy prince, betrayed by his own general, fell into the hands of the old Mexican Government, now in the ascendant, and was tried by court-martial and shot. It should be remembered, however, that France's unfriendly attitude all through the Rebellion was maintained by her unscrupulous emperor and did not reflect the wish of the French people.

The expenses of the war were colossal. From beginning to close they averaged $2,000,000 a day, sometimes running up to $3,500,000. The expenditure for the fiscal year ending July 1, 1865, was nearly $2,000,000,000. Of this the War Department required, in round numbers, $1,000,000,000 ; the navy department, $123,000,000. These figures reveal the vast scale upon which the war was waged by land and sea. The national debt rose with frightful rapidity. It was $64,000,000 in 1860, $1,100,000,000 in 1863, $2,800,000,000 (the highest point reached) in 1865. State and local war debts would swell the amount to more than $4,000,000,000.

The position of Secretary of the Treasury during the war was anything but a bed of roses. The ordinary national income was hardly a drop in the bucket compared with the enormous and constantly increasing expenses. The total receipts for the year

ending July 1, 1860, were only $81,000,000. How should the vast sums needed to carry on the war be raised? Resort was had to two sources of revenue—taxation and loans.

A considerable revenue was already derived from customs imposed upon imported goods. In 1861, and again in 1863, tariffs were raised enormously, professedly to increase the revenue. These high rates in a measure defeated their own purpose, altogether stopping the importation of not a few articles.

The war compelled the Government to resort to internal taxation—always unpopular and now unknown in the United States for nearly half a century. Taxes were laid upon almost everything—upon trades, incomes, legacies, manufactures. The words of Sidney Smith will apply to our internal taxes during the war: "Taxes on the ermine which decorates the judge, and the rope which hangs the criminal; on the poor man's salt and the rich man's spice; on the brass nails of the coffin and the ribands of the bride." The tax on many finished products ranged from eight to fifteen per cent.; on some it rose to twenty per cent.

But these taxes, severe as they were, could furnish only a small part of the necessary income. The Government must borrow. In the first year of the war the banks loaned the United States $150,000,000 at 7.3 per cent. interest. Many other loans were secured as the war went on—one for $500,000,000, another for $900,000,000. As security the Government issued bonds, bearing various rates of interest and payable after a certain num-

ber of years. Treasury notes were also issued and made legal tender for all debts public and private. As the Government paid its own debts with them, they were in the nature of a forced loan. Of those which bore no interest (commonly known as greenbacks) $433,000,000 were issued from first to last. Also, when property was seized for the use of the army, the owners were given certificates of indebtedness which entitled the holders to payment at the United States Treasury.

The proportion of revenue derived from each of the above sources is illustrated by the report of the treasurer of the United States for the year ending July 1, 1865. Customs yielded $85,000,000, internal revenue $209,000,000, loans $1,470,000,000.

Finance legislation during the war was more patriotic than wise, due partly to necessary haste, largely to ignorance. The internal taxes bore very unequally upon different classes. The tariff was ill-adjusted to the internal taxes, letting in at low rates some classes of goods whose home production was heavily taxed, thus discriminating in favor of the foreigner. Millions of debt and half the other economic evil of the war might have been saved by doing more to keep the paper dollar on a par with gold. Thus the banks should not have been compelled to pay in gold the loan of 1861. It forced them to suspend specie payment altogether, December 31st of that year—those of New York City first, followed by others everywhere, and by the United States itself. Gold had been at a nominal premium all through 1861, but the first recorded

sale at an advance was on January 13, 1862. It would have been better, also, to resort earlier to heavy loans, even at high rates, instead of flooding the country with greenbacks. The national banks, which were created on purpose to help the sale of Government bonds, should have been forced to purchase new bonds instead of supplying themselves with bonds already issued, their purchase of which did the Government no good whatever. Neglect in these regards caused the paper dollar to fall in value. In July, 1864, it was worth only thirty-five cents in gold.

The finances of the Confederacy went steadily from bad to worse. The blockade cut off its revenue from import duties. Its poor credit forbade large loans. The government had to rely mainly upon paper money. This soon became almost worthless. In December, 1861, it took $120 in paper money to buy $100 in gold; in 1863 it took $1,900; in 1864, $5,000. Nearly $1,000,000,000 in paper money was issued in all. The confederate debt at the close of the war was $2,000,000,000. Under the combined influence of depreciated currency and scarcity of goods, prices became ludicrously high. As early as 1862 flour was $40 a barrel and salt $1 a pound. Before the war was over, a pound of sugar brought $75, a spool of thread $20. Toward the end of the war a confederate soldier, just paid off, went into a store to buy a pair of boots. The price was $200. He handed the store-keeper a $500 bill. "I can't change this." "Oh, never mind," replied the paper millionnaire. "I never let a little matter like $300 interfere with a trade." Of course when

the Confederacy collapsed all this paper money became absolutely worthless.

Mr. Lincoln and the Republican Party resorted to arms not intending the slightest alteration in the constitutional status of slavery. But the presence of Union armies on slave soil led to new and puzzling questions. What should be done with slaves escaping to the Union lines? Generals Buell and Hooker authorized slaveholders to search their camps for runaway slaves. Halleck gave orders to drive them out of his lines. Butler, alleging that since slaves helped "the rebels" by constructing fortifications they were contraband of war, refused to return those fleeing into his camp. Congress moved up to this position in August, 1861, declaring that slaves used for hostile purposes should be confiscated. But when Fremont and Hunter issued orders freeing slaves in their military districts, President Lincoln felt obliged to countermand them, fearing the effect upon slave States that were still loyal.

As the war went on the conviction grew that peace would never be safe or permanent if slavery remained, and that the suppression of the Rebellion was postponed, jeopardized, and made costlier by every hour of slavery's life. Slaves raised crops, did camp work, and built fortifications, releasing so many more whites for service in hostile ranks, instead of doing all this, and fighting, even, for the Union.

It is interesting to trace the growth of emancipation sentiment during 1862 as it is reflected in congressional legislation. In March army officers

were forbidden to return fugitive slaves. In April slavery was abolished in the District of Columbia, with compensation to owners. At the same time Congress adopted a pet scheme of Mr. Lincoln's, offering compensation to any State that would free its slaves. None accepted. There were about three thousand slaves in the District. Upon the day of their emancipation they assembled in churches and gave thanks to God. In June slavery in the Territories—that bone of contention through so many years—was forever prohibited. In July an act was passed freeing rebels' slaves coming under the Government's protection, and authorizing the use of negro soldiers.

Already President Lincoln was meditating universal emancipation. September 22d the friends of liberty were made glad by a preliminary proclamation, announcing the President's intention to free the slaves on January 1, 1863, should rebellion then continue to exist. It is said that Mr. Lincoln would have given this notice earlier but for the gloomy state of military affairs. The day comes. The proclamation goes forth that all persons held as slaves in the rebellious sections "are and henceforth shall be free." The blot which had so long stained our national banner was wiped away. The Constitution of course does not expressly authorize such an act by the President, but Mr. Lincoln defended it as a "necessary war measure," "warranted by the Constitution upon military necessity."

This bold, epoch-making deed, the death-warrant of slavery here and throughout the world, evoked serious hostility even at the North. The

elections in the fall of 1862 and the spring of 1863 showed serious losses for the administration party. Emancipation, too, doubtless added rancor and verve for a time to southern belligerency. But the fresh union, spirit, and strength it soon brought to the northern cause were tenfold compensation. Besides, it vastly exalted our struggle in the moral estimate of Christendom, and lessened danger of foreign intervention.

The War President trod at no time a path of flowers. Strong and general as was Union sentiment at the North, extremely diverse feelings and views prevailed touching the methods and spirit which should govern the conduct of the war. Certain timid, discouraged, or disappointed Republicans, seeing the appalling loss of blood and treasure as the war went on, and the Confederacy's unexpected tenacity of life, demanded peace on the easiest terms inclusive of intact Union. Secretaries Seward and Chase were for a time in this temper. The doctrinaire abolitionists bitterly assailed President and Congress for not making, from the outset, the extirpation of slavery the main aim of hostilities. Even the great emancipation pacified them but little.

The Democrats proper entered a far more sensible, in fact a not wholly groundless, complaint exactly the contrary. They charged that the administration, in hopes to exhibit the Democracy as a peace party (which from 1862 it more and more became) *was* making the overthrow of slavery its main aim, waging war for the negro instead of for the Union. They complained

also that not only in anti-slavery measures but in other things as well, notably in suspending *habeas corpus*, the administration was grievously infringing the Constitution.

Yet a fourth class, a democratic rump of southern sympathizers, popularly called "copperheads," wishing peace at any price, did their best to encourage the Rebellion. They denounced the war as cruel, needless, and a failure. They opposed the draft for troops, and were partly responsible for the draft riots in 1863. Many of them were in league with southern leaders, and held membership in treasonable associations. Some were privy to, if not participant in, devilish plots to spread fire and pestilence in northern camps and cities. Partly through influence of the more moderate, several efforts to negotiate peace were made, fortunately every one in vain.

But despite the attacks of enemies and the importunities of weak or short-sighted friends, President Lincoln steadily held on his course. The masses of the people rallied to his support, and in the presidential election of 1864 he was re-elected by an overwhelming majority, receiving two hundred and twelve electoral votes against twenty-one for General McClellan, the democratic candidate.

CHAPTER XI.

RECONSTRUCTION

THOUGH arms were grounded, there remained the new task, longer and more perplexing, if not more difficult, than the first, of restoring the South to its normal position in the Union. It was, from the nature of the case, a delicate one. The proud and sensitive South smarted under defeat and was not yet cured of the illusions which had led her to secede. Salve and not salt needed to be rubbed into her wounds. The North stood ready to forgive the past, but insisted, in the name of its desolate homes and slaughtered President, that the South must be restored on such conditions that the past could never be repeated. The difficulty was heightened by the lack of either constitutional provision or historical precedent. Not strange, therefore, that the actors in this new drama of reconstruction played their parts awkwardly and with many mistakes.

A most interesting constitutional problem had to be faced at the outset: What effect had secession had upon the States guilty of it; was it or was it not an act of state suicide? This question was warmly debated in Congress and out. Although ridiculed in some quarters as a mere meta-

physical quibble, it lay at the bottom of men's political thinking on reconstruction, and their views of the proper answer to it powerfully influenced their action.

All loyal Democrats and most Republicans answered it in the negative. Secession, they said, being an invalid act, had no effect whatever; the rebellious tracts were still States of the Union in spite of themselves. But the two parties reasoned their way to this conclusion by different roads. The Democrats deduced the view from the State's intrinsic sovereignty, the Republicans from the national constitution as ordaining "an indestructible Union of indestructible States." This class of thinkers, in whichever party they were found, naturally preferred the term "restoration" to "reconstruction."

The theory of state suicide was held by many, but with a difference. Sumner and a few others deemed that secession had destroyed statehood alone; that over individuals the Constitution still extended its authority and its protection, as in Territories. Thaddeus Stevens and his followers viewed secession as having left the State not only defunct but a washed slate governmentally, like soil won by conquest. Both these parties conceived the work before Congress to be out-and-out "reconstruction," involving the right to change old state lines and institutions at will. Not even this position was more ultra than the course which reconstruction actually took.

Closely related to this main problem were several other questions nearly or quite as vexing.

Were any conditions to be imposed upon the peoples seeking re-admission to the Union as States? If so, what, aside from the loyalty of voters and office-holders, were these conditions? Was the President to initiate and oversee the process of redintegration, prescribing the conditions of re-admission, and determining when they were fulfilled, or was all this the business of Congress? And, lastly, did the right thus to oversee and impose conditions depend upon a certain war power of Congress or of President, or upon the clause of the Constitution which guarantees to every State a republican form of government? Nearly the same question as this, in another form, would be, Was this right explicitly constitutional or only impliedly so?

The answer practically returned to these difficult inquiries was that Congress, as a *quasi* war right, must exact of the States lately in secession all the conditions necessary, in its view, to their permanent loyalty and the peace of the Union.

The history of reconstruction divides into three periods: Reconstruction during the war, President Johnson's work, and Congressional reconstruction.

Restoration was the universal thought at first. Congressional resolutions in 1861 declared that the war was not waged "for the purpose of overthrowing or interfering with the rights or established institutions" of the seceding States. Their action was looked upon as an insurrection against the state government as well as against the United States. Accordingly, when a

handful of Virginia loyalists, in the summer of 1861, formed a state government and elected national senators and representatives, President and Congress recognized them as the true State of Virginia.

Following out the same idea, President Lincoln proclaimed in 1863 that as soon as one-tenth of the voters of any seceded State would swear to abide by the Constitution and the emancipation laws they might form a state government. In this way Louisiana, Arkansas, and Tennessee were reconstructed during 1863 and 1865.

The hand of the assassin removed Lincoln from the scene of action at a time when North and South alike stood most in need of his kind heart, tact, and firmness. Andrew Johnson succeeded to a task for which he was ill-fitted. Conceited, obstinate, and pugnacious, he began by alarming the South with threats of wholesale punishment for the "crime of treason," and ended by alienating his own party through his slack methods of re-establishing the States. Johnson declared, and no doubt honestly, that he was carrying out Lincoln's ideas. In May, 1865, he offered amnesty to all but certain excepted classes, mainly civil and military leaders, upon condition of an oath to support the Constitution, including its Thirteenth Amendment, forbidding slavery. Though the proclamation declaring this to be in force did not issue till December 18, 1865, it had been approved by Congress the preceding February.

President Johnson then proceeded to re-organize the state governments. For each seceded State,

except the four already re-constructed, he appointed a provincial governor. The governor called a State convention. Only whites who had taken the amnesty oath could elect delegates, or themselves be elected, to this convention. At the instance of the President the convention adopted a constitution or legislation which forbade slavery, declared the ordinance of secession null and void, and repudiated the confederate debt. The convention then appointed times and places for the election of a legislature and a permanent governor. In a few months the governmental machinery had been set in motion in all the late Confederate States, and in December senators and representatives from all except Texas were knocking at the doors of Congress.

Thus far the President had had full sway. But upon the re-assembling of Congress in December, it became apparent that he and his party were not in harmony. Congress, still overwhelmingly republican, refused to admit the southern delegates, and appointed a committee to investigate the condition of affairs in the southern States. Its report was anything but re-assuring, and Congress, mainly under the lead of Thaddeus Stevens, boldly proceeded to rip up the entire presidential work.

Several considerations led Congress to this course. They denied the President's right, on his own sole authority, to re-establish permanent governments in the States in question. Furthermore, the new state governments were declared unlawful because their constitutions had not been submitted to the people for ratification. Congress also

maintained that only the law-making power could of right determine the conditions of re-admission to the Union, and judge whether or not those conditions had been fulfilled.

But the consideration which outweighed all others in favor of the congressional procedure was the alarming temper and acts of the South itself. The Carolinas and Georgia had simply repealed the ordinance of secession instead of declaring it null and void. The reconstructed legislatures pensioned confederate soldiers and their families. "Notorious and unpardoned rebels" were elected as state officers and to Congress.

Worse than this, nearly all the southern States passed laws which went far toward reducing the blacks again to slavery. In Virginia, if a negro broke his labor-contract, the employer could pursue him and compel him to work an extra month, with chain and ball if necessary. In Mississippi negro children who were orphans, or whose parents did not support them, were to be apprenticed till they became of age. Their masters could inflict upon them "moderate corporal punishment," and re-capture such as ran away. In South Carolina any negro engaging in business had to pay $100 yearly as a license. Mechanics were fined $10 each a year for prosecuting their trades. No negro could settle in the State without giving bonds for his good behavior and support. In Louisiana a farm laborer was required to make a year's contract; if he failed to work out the time, he could be punished by forced labor upon public works. Not all the new southern legislation was of this savage

character, and this itself must be viewed in the light of the fact that the negroes, trained in irresponsibility, were inclined to idleness and theft. But it was nevertheless unjust. In some sections only the interposition of the military and of the Freedman's Bureau made life tolerable to the blacks.

As an offset to the above dangerous acts and tendencies, Congress, in the spring of 1866, passed the Fourteenth Amendment * and submitted it to the States for ratification. It was meant to insure to negroes in every State all the rights of citizens and the equal protection of the laws. If and so long as negroes were in any State forbidden to vote, it reduced that State's representation in Congress proportionally; it excluded from national and state offices certain specified confederate leaders; and it guarded the national debt, repudiating all indebtedness on behalf of the Rebellion. Every secession State but Tennessee rejected the amendment.

Congress replied by the "iron law" of March 2, 1867. "Secessia" was divided into five districts and placed under military rule, there to remain until certain conditions were fulfilled. These conditions were, in brief, the calling of a state convention by the loyal citizens, blacks included; the framing by the convention of a constitution enfranchising negroes; the ratification of this constitution by the people and its approval by Congress; the ratification of the Fourteenth Amend-

* Declared in force July 28, 1868, having been ratified by three-fourths of the States.

ment by the new legislature. Having conformed to these prescriptions the State might be represented in Congress and consider itself fully restored to the Union. A supplementary law of March 19th hastened the process by giving the district commanders surveillance of registration and the initiative in calling conventions.

By June, 1868, a sufficient number of the southern States had complied with the conditions to make the Fourteenth Amendment law. Virginia, Mississippi, and Texas held out till 1870, and hence were forced to ratify the Fifteenth Amendment also. Not till January 30, 1871, were all the States again represented in both Houses of Congress as in 1860.

All through the days of congressional reconstruction the antagonism between President and Congress steadily increased. Every step in the progress encountered the President's uttermost opposition and spite. He vetoed all important reconstruction measures, which were promptly carried over his veto. There was much violent language and bitter feeling on both sides. The irritation finally culminated when the House entered articles of impeachment against Johnson—the only case of the kind in our history involving a President. The charges were tried before the Senate in March, 1868, the Chief Justice presiding, and occupied three weeks. Benjamin R. Curtis and William M. Evarts were of Johnson's counsel. Shining legal talent appeared on both sides. The main charge was that the President had wilfully violated the Tenure of Office Act in removing Sec-

retary Stanton from the Cabinet after the Senate had once refused to concur in his removal. The House was hasty in bringing the prosecution. The President was acquitted by a vote of nineteen against and thirty-five for impeachment — one vote less than the two-thirds necessary to impeach. The Johnson-Congressional conflict proved one of the most mortifying episodes in our country's history.

PERIOD V.

THE CEMENTED UNION

1868–1888

CHAPTER I.

POLITICAL HISTORY OF THE LAST TWO DECADES

THE presidential election of 1868 was decided at Appomattox. General Grant was borne to the White House on a flood-tide of popularity, carrying twenty-six out of the thirty-four voting States. Schuyler Colfax, of Indiana, became Vice-president. The Democrats had nominated Horatio Seymour, of New York, and F. P. Blair, of Missouri. Reconstruction was the great issue. The democratic platform demanded universal amnesty and the immediate restoration of all the commonwealths lately in secession, and insisted that the regulation of the franchise should be left with States.

The management of the South was the most serious problem before the new administration. The whites were striving by fair means and foul to get political power back into their own hands. The reconstructed state governments, dependent upon black majorities, were too weak for successful resistance. The Ku-Klux and similar organizations were practically a masked army. The President

was appealed to for military aid, and he responded. Small detachments of United States troops hurried hither and thither. Wherever they appeared resistance ceased; but when fresh outbreaks elsewhere called the soldiers away, the fight against the hated state government was immediately renewed. The negroes soon learned to stay at home on election day, and the whites, once in the saddle, were too skilful riders to be thrown.

Congress, meanwhile, still strongly republican, was taking active measures to protect the blacks. In 1870 it passed an act imposing fines and damages for a conspiracy to deprive negroes of the suffrage. The Force Act of 1871 was a much harsher measure. It empowered the President to employ the army, navy, and militia to suppress combinations which deprived the negro of the rights guaranteed him by the Fourteenth Amendment. For such combinations to appear in arms was made rebellion against the United States, and the President might suspend *habeas corpus* in the rebellious district. By President Grant, in the fall of 1871, this was actually done in parts of the Carolinas. State registrations and elections were to be supervised by United States marshals, who could command the help of the United States military or naval forces.

The Force Act outran popular feeling. It came dangerously near the practical suspension of state government in the South, and many at the North, including some Republicans, thought the latter result a greater evil than even the temporary abeyance of negro suffrage. The "Liberal Republi-

cans" bolted. In 1872 they nominated Horace Greeley for the Presidency, and adopted a platform declaring local self-government a better safeguard for the rights of all citizens than centralized power. The platform also protested against the supremacy of the military over the civil power and the suspension of *habeas corpus*, and favored universal amnesty to the men at the South. Charles Sumner, Stanley Matthews, Carl Schurz, David A. Wells, and many other prominent Republicans engaged in the opposition.

Thinking their opportunity had come, the Democrats endorsed the Liberals' platform and nominees. The Republicans renominated Grant by acclamation, and joined with him on the ticket Henry Wilson, of Massachusetts.

As the campaign went on, the Greeley movement developed remarkable strength and remarkable weakness. Speaking for years through the *New York Tribune*, Mr. Greeley had won, in a remarkable degree, the respect and even the affection of the country. His offer to give bail for Jefferson Davis in his imprisonment, and his stanch advocacy of mercy to all who had engaged in rebellion so soon as they had grounded arms, made him hosts of friends even in the South. He took the stump himself, making the tour of Pennsylvania, Ohio, and Indiana, and crowds of Republicans came to see and hear their former champion.

But the Democrats could not heartily unite in the support of such a lifelong and bitter opponent of their party. Some supported a third ticket, while many others did not vote at all. Mr. Greeley,

too, an ardent protectionist, was not popular with the influential free-trade element among the Liberals themselves. The election resulted in a sweeping victory for the republican ticket. The Democrats carried but six States, and those were all in the South. Within a month after the election, Mr. Greeley died, broken down by over-exertion, family bereavement, and disappointed ambition.

Troubles in the South continued during Grant's second term. The turmoil reached its height in Louisiana in 1874. Ever since 1872 the whites in that State had been chafing under republican rule. The election of Governor Kellogg was disputed, and he was accused of having plunged the State into ruinous debt. In August, 1874, a disturbance occurred which ended in the deliberate shooting of six republican officials. President Grant prepared to send military aid to the Kellogg government. Thereupon Penn, the defeated candidate for Lieutenant-governor in 1872, issued an address to the people, claiming to be the lawful executive of Louisiana, and calling upon the state militia to arm and drive "the usurpers from power." Barricades were thrown up in the streets of New Orleans, and on September 14th a severe fight took place between the insurgents and the state forces, in which a dozen were killed on each side. On the next day the state-house was surrendered to the militia, ten thousand of whom had responded to Penn's call. Governor Kellogg took refuge in the custom-house. Penn was formally inducted into office. United States troops were hurried to

the scene. Agreeably to their professions of loyalty toward the Federal Government, the insurgents surrendered the state property to the United States authorities without resistance, but under protest. The Kellogg government was re-instated.

Troops at the polls secured quiet in the November elections. The returning board decided that the Republicans had elected their governor and fifty-four members of the legislature. Fifty-two members were democratic, while the election of five members remained in doubt, and was left to the decision of the legislature. The Democrats vehemently protested against the decision of the returning board, claiming an all round victory. Fearing trouble at the assembling of the legislature in January, 1875, President Grant placed General Sheridan in command at New Orleans. The legislature met on January 4th. Our reports of what followed are conflicting. The admitted facts are that the democratic members, lawfully or unlawfully, placed a speaker in the chair. Some disorder ensuing, United States soldiers were called in and, at the request of the democratic speaker, restored quiet. The Republicans meanwhile had left the house. The Democrats then elected members to fill the five seats left vacant by the returning board. Later in the day, United States troops, under orders from Governor Kellogg, to whom the republican legislators had appealed, ejected the five new members. The Republicans re-entered the house, and the Democrats thereupon withdrew. Subsequently a congressional committee made unsuccessful attempts to settle the dispute. The

democratic members finally returned, and a sullen acquiescence in the Kellogg government gradually prevailed.

By 1876 every southern State was solidly democratic except Louisiana, South Carolina, and Florida, and in these republican governments were upheld only by the bayonet.

The presidential election of 1876 was a contest of general tendencies rather than of definite principles. The opposing parties were more nearly matched than they had been since 1860. The Democrats nominated Samuel J. Tilden, of New York, and Thomas A. Hendricks, of Indiana. Rutherford B. Hayes, of Ohio, and William A. Wheeler, of New York, became the republican standard-bearers. The election passed off quietly, troops being stationed at the polls in turbulent quarters. Mr. Tilden carried New York, New Jersey, Indiana, and Connecticut. With a solid South, he had won the day. But the returning boards of Louisiana, Florida, and South Carolina, throwing out the votes of several democratic districts on the ground of fraud or intimidation, decided that those States had gone republican, giving Hayes a majority of one in the electoral college. The Democrats raised the cry of fraud. Suppressed excitement pervaded the country. Threats were even muttered that Hayes would never be inaugurated. President Grant quietly strengthened the military force in and about Washington. The country looked to Congress for a peaceful solution of the problem, and not in vain.

The Constitution provides that "the President

of the Senate shall, in presence of the Senate and House of Representatives, open all the [electoral] certificates, and the votes shall then be counted." Certain Republicans held that the power to count the votes lay with the President of the Senate, the House and Senate being mere spectators. The Democrats naturally objected to this construction, since Mr. Ferry, the republican president of the Senate, could then count the votes of the disputed States for Hayes.

The Democrats insisted that Congress should continue the practice followed since 1865, which was that no vote objected to should be counted except by the concurrence of both houses. The House was strongly democratic; by throwing out the vote of one State it could elect Tilden.

The deadlock could be broken only by a compromise. A joint committee reported the famous Electoral Commission Bill, which passed House and Senate by large majorities; 186 Democrats voting for the bill and eighteen against it, while the republican vote stood fifty-two for and seventy-five against. The bill created a commission of five senators, five representatives, and five justices of the United States Supreme Court, the fifth justice being chosen by the four appointed in the bill. Previous to this choice the commission contained seven Democrats and seven Republicans. It was expected that the fifth justice would be Hon. David Davis, of Illinois, a neutral with democratic leanings; but his unexpected election as democratic senator from his State caused Justice Bradley to be selected to the post of decisive umpire. The

votes of all disputed States were to be submitted to the commission for decision.

It was drawing perilously near to inauguration day. The commission met on the last day of January. The cases of Florida, Louisiana, Oregon, and South Carolina were in succession submitted to it by Congress. Eminent counsel appeared for each side. There were double sets of returns from every one of the States named. In the three southern States the governor recognized by the United States had signed the republican certificates. The democratic certificates from Florida were signed by the state attorney-general and the new democratic governor; those from Louisiana by the democratic gubernatorial candidate, who claimed to be the lawful governor; those from South Carolina by no state official, the Tilden electors simply claiming to have been chosen by the popular vote and rejected by the returning board. In Oregon the democratic governor declared one of the Hayes electors ineligible because an office-holder, and gave a certificate to Cronin, the highest Tilden elector, instead. The other two Hayes electors refused to recognize Cronin, and, associating with them the rejected republican elector, presented a certificate signed by the secretary of state. Cronin, appointing two new electors to act with him, cast his vote for Tilden, his associates voting for Hayes. This certificate was signed by the governor and attested by the secretary of state.

After deciding not to go behind any returns which were *prima facie* lawful, the commission,

by a strict party vote of eight to seven, gave a decision for the Hayes electors in every case. March 2d it adjourned, and three days later Hayes was inaugurated without disturbance.

The whole country heaved a sigh of relief. All agreed that provision must be made against such peril in the future; but it was not till late in 1886 that Congress could agree upon the necessary measure. The Electoral Count Bill was then passed, and signed by the President on February 3, 1887. It aims to throw upon each State, so far as possible, the responsibility of determining how its own presidential vote has been cast. It provides that the President of the Senate shall open the electoral certificates in the presence of both houses, and hand them to the tellers, two from each house, who are to read them aloud and record the votes.

If there has been no dispute as to the list of electors from a State, such list, where certified in due form, is to be accepted as a matter of course. In case of dispute, the procedure is as follows: If but one set of returns appears and this is authenticated by a state electoral tribunal constituted to settle the dispute, such returns shall be conclusive. If there are two or more sets of returns, the set approved by the state tribunal shall be accepted. If there are two rival tribunals, the vote of the State shall be thrown out, unless both houses, acting separately, agree upon the lawfulness of one tribunal or the other. If there has been no decision by a tribunal, those votes shall be counted which both houses, acting separately, decide to be

lawful. If the houses disagree, the votes certified to by the governor shall be accepted.

President Hayes's first important action was the withdrawal of troops from South Carolina and Louisiana, where the rival governments existed side by side. The Republican governments at once fell to the ground. As the Democrats had already got control in Florida, the "solid South" was now an accomplished fact. Financial questions were those which chiefly occupied the public mind during Hayes's administration. They are referred to in Chapter VII., below.

Returning from a remarkable tour around the world, General Grant became in 1880 a candidate for a third-term nomination. The dead-lock in the republican convention between him and Mr. Blaine was broken by the nomination of James A. Garfield, of Ohio. Chester A. Arthur, of New York, was the vice-presidential candidate. The Democrats nominated the hero of Gettysburg, the brave and renowned General W. S. Hancock, of Pennsylvania, and William H. English, of Indiana. Garfield was elected, receiving 214 electoral votes against 155 for Hancock. Hancock carried every southern State; Garfield every northern State except New Jersey, Nevada, and California.

President Garfield had hardly entered upon his high duties when he was cut down by the hand of an assassin. On the morning of July 2, 1881, the President entered the railway station at Washington, intending to take an eastern trip. Charles J. Guiteau, a disappointed office-seeker, crept up behind him and fired two bullets at him, one of

which lodged in his back. The President died on September 19th, after weeks of suffering. Vice-president Arthur succeeded to the presidency, and had an uneventful but respectable administration.

Guiteau's trial began in November and lasted more than two months. The defence was insanity. The assassin maintained that he was inspired to commit the deed, and that it was a political necessity. The "stalwart" Republicans, headed by Senator Conkling, had quarrelled with the President over certain appointments unacceptable to the New York Senator; Guiteau pretended to think the removal of Mr. Garfield necessary to the unity of the party and the salvation of the country. The prosecution showed that Guiteau had long been an unprincipled adventurer, greedy for notoriety; that he first conceived of killing the President after his hopes of office were finally destroyed; and that he had planned the murder several weeks in advance. Guiteau was found guilty, and executed at Washington on June 30, 1882. The autopsy showed no disease of the brain.

Although it had no logical connection with the "spoils" system, the assassination of President Garfield called the attention of the whole country to the crying need of reform in the civil service. Ever since the days of President Jackson, in 1829, appointments to the minor federal offices had been used for the payment of party debts and to keep up partisan interest. This practice incurred the deep condemnation of Webster, Clay, Calhoun, and others, but no practical steps toward reform were taken till 1871. The abuses of the spoils system

had then become so flagrant that Congress created a civil service commission, which instituted competitive examinations to test the merits of candidates for office in the departments at Washington. President Grant reported that the new methods "had given persons of superior capacity to the service." But Congress, always niggardly in its appropriations for the work of the commission, after 1875 cut them off altogether, and the rules were suspended.

Under President Hayes civil service reform made considerable progress in an irregular way. Secretary Schurz enforced competitive examinations in the Interior department. They were also applied by Mr. James to the New York Post-office, and, as the result, one-third more work was done with less cost. Similar good results followed the enforcement of the "merit system" in the New York custom-house after 1879. President Hayes also strongly condemned political assessments upon office-holders, but with small practical effect.

The alarming increase of corruption in political circles generally, after the war, helped to create popular sentiment for reform. Corrupt "rings" sprang up in every city. The "whiskey ring," composed of distillers and government employees, assumed national proportions in 1874, cheating the Government out of a large part of its revenue from spirits. Liberal appropriations for building a navy were squandered.

During the campaign of 1872, the Democrats charged several prominent Congressmen with having taken bribes, in 1867–68, to vote for legislation

desired by the Union Pacific Railroad. At the request of the accused, an examination was had by a House committee. The committee's report in 1873 recommended the expulsion of Representatives Oakes Ames and James Brooks. Mr. Ames was accused of selling to Congressmen at reduced rates, with intent to influence their votes, shares of stock in the "Credit Mobilier," a corporation for the construction of the Union Pacific Railroad. Mr. Brooks, who was a government director in the railroad, was charged with receiving such shares. The House did not expel the two members, but severely condemned them. Shadows of varying density fell upon many prominent politicians and darkened their subsequent careers.

The tragic fate of President Garfield, following these and other revelations of political corruption, brought public sentiment on civil service reform to a head. A bill prepared by the Civil Service Reform League, and introduced by Senator Pendleton, of Ohio, passed Congress in January, 1883, and on the 16th received the signature of the President.

It authorized the President, with the consent of the Senate, to appoint three civil service commissioners, who were to institute competitive examinations open to all persons desiring to enter the government employ. It provided that the clerks in the departments at Washington, and in every customs district or post-office where fifty or more were employed, should be arranged in classes, and that in the future only persons who had passed the examinations should be appointed to service in these offices or promoted from a lower class to a

higher, preference being given according to rank in the examinations. Candidates were to serve six months' probation at practical work before receiving a final appointment. The bill struck a heavy blow at political assessments, by declaring that no official should be removed for refusing to contribute to political funds. Congressmen or government officials convicted of soliciting or receiving political assessments from government employees became liable to a $5,000 fine, or three years' imprisonment, or both. Persons in the government service were forbidden to use their official authority or influence to coerce the political action of anyone, or to interfere with elections.

Dorman B. Eaton, Leroy B. Thoman, and John M. Gregory were appointed commissioners by President Arthur. By the end of the year the new system was fairly in operation. Besides the departments at Washington, it applied to eleven customs districts and twenty-three post-offices where fifty or more officials were employed. The law could be thoroughly tested only when a new party came into power; that time was near at hand.

The deepest and most significant political movement of the last twenty years has been the gradual recovery of power by the Democracy. For some years after the Rebellion, this party's war record was a millstone around its neck. The financial distress in 1873 and the corruption prevalent in political circles weakened the party in power, while the Democracy, putting slavery and reconstruction behind its back, turned to new issues, and raised the cry of "economy" and "reform."

The state elections of 1874 witnessed a "tidal wave" of democratic victories. Out of 292 members of the House in 1875, 198 were democratic. Two-thirds of the Senators were still republican. Even by republican reckoning, the democratic presidential ticket in 1876 received a popular majority of 157,000 and lacked but one electoral vote. In 1879 both houses of Congress were democratic, by small majorities, for the first time since 1856. The tide ebbed in 1880, the Democrats losing control of the House, and suffering a decisive defeat in the presidential election; but with 1884 the fortune of the Democracy reached high-water mark.

In this year James G. Blaine, of Maine, and John A. Logan, of Illinois, received the republican nomination for President and Vice-president. A number of Independent Republicans, including the most earnest advocates of civil service reform, were strongly opposed to Mr. Blaine, alleging him to be personally corrupt and the representative of corrupt political methods. They met in conference, denounced the nominations, and later endorsed the democratic nominees—Grover Cleveland, governor of New York, and Thomas A. Hendricks, of Indiana. George W. Curtis, Carl Schurz, and other prominent Republicans took part in the movement. Several influential Independent republican papers, including the *New York Times*, *Boston Herald*, and *Springfield Republican* joined the bolt.

The campaign was bitterly personal, attacks upon the characters of the candidates taking the

place of a discussion of principles. Mr. Cleveland was elected, receiving 219 electoral votes against 182 for Mr. Blaine. He carried every southern State, besides New York, Connecticut, Indiana, Delaware, Maryland, and New Jersey. The total popular vote was over 10,000,000—the largest ever cast. Cleveland had 4,911,000, a plurality of 62,000 over Blaine. The Democrats regained control of the House in 1883, and held it by a considerable majority to the end of Mr. Cleveland's first term. In the Senate, until the election of 1892, the Republicans continued to have a small majority.

Upon the accession of the new administration to power, the country waited with deep interest to see its effect upon the civil service. Mr. Cleveland had pledged himself to a rigid enforcement of the new law, and encouraged all to believe that with him impartial civil service would not be confined to the few offices thus protected. After the first few months of Cleveland's administration, one fact was apparent: for the first time since the days of Jackson a change of the party in power had not been followed by a clean sweep among the holders of offices. But, as the subsequent record painfully shows, office-holders' pressure proved too strong for Mr. Cleveland's resolution.

There were then about 120,000 government employees. Of these, not far from 14,000 were covered by the Pendleton law. All the other minor places were held at the pleasure of superior officers. These latter officers numbered about 58,000. In August, 1887, from 45,000 to 48,000 of them had been changed, implying change in the offices de-

pendent upon them. There were some 55,000 post-masters, 2,400 of whom were appointed by the President for a term of four years, the rest by the postmaster-general at pleasure. At the date named, from 37,000 to 47,000 changes had been made in this department. These changes, of course, were not all removals, as many vacancies occur by expiration of terms, death of incumbents, and other causes.

An important statute regarding the presidential succession, introduced by Senator Hoar, passed Congress in January, 1886. By previous statutes, in case of the removal, death, resignation, or disability of the President and Vice-president, the presidency passed in order to the temporary President of the Senate and the Speaker of the House. The latter two might be of the opposite party from the President's, so that by the succession of either the will of the people as expressed in the presidential election would manifestly be defeated. Moreover, in case of a President's death and the accession of the Vice-president, the latter, too, might die, and thus both the presidency and the vice-presidency become vacant in the interim between two Congresses, when there is neither President of the Senate nor Speaker of the House. Thus President Garfield died September 19, 1881, and the XLVIIIth Congress did not convene to choose a Speaker until the next December. The Senate had adjourned without electing a presiding officer. Had President Arthur died at any moment during the intervening period—and it is said that he was for a time in imminent danger of death

—the distracting contingency just spoken of would have been upon the country.

According to the new law, in case of a vacancy in both presidency and vice-presidency, the presidency devolves upon the members of the cabinet in the historical order of the establishment of their departments, beginning with the Secretary of State. Should he die, be impeached, or disabled, the Secretary of the Treasury would become President, to be followed in like crisis by the Secretary of War, he by the Attorney-General, he by the Postmaster-General, he by the Secretary of the Navy, he by the Secretary of the Interior, and he by the Secretary of Agriculture. We have still no legal or official criterion of a President's disability. We do not know whether, during Garfield's illness, for instance—apparently a clear case of disability—it was proper for his cabinet to perform his presidential duties, or whether Arthur should not have assumed these. Barring this chance for conflict, it is not easy to think of an emergency in which the chief magistracy can now fall vacant, or the appropriate incumbent thereof be in doubt.

CHAPTER II.

THE TREATY OF WASHINGTON

THE year 1871 was marked by the conclusion of an important treaty between England and the United States. Besides settling certain questions which threatened the friendly relations of the two countries, the treaty enunciated important principles of international law, and afforded the world a shining instance of peaceful arbitration as a substitute for the horrors of war.

Ever since 1863 the United States had been seeking satisfaction from Great Britain for the depredations committed by the Alabama and other confederate cruisers sailing from English ports. Negotiations were broken off in 1865 and again in 1868. The next year Reverdy Johnson, American Minister to England, negotiated a treaty, but it was rejected by the Senate. In January, 1871, the British Government proposed a joint commission for the settlement of questions connected with the Canadian fisheries. Mr. Fish, our Secretary of State, replied that the settlement of the "Alabama Claims" would be "essential to the restoration of cordial and amicable relations between the two governments." England consented to submit this question also to the commission, and on Feb-

ruary 27th five high commissioners from each country met at Washington. The British delegation included cabinet officers, the minister to the United States, and an Oxford professor of international law. The American commissioners were of equally high station, the Secretary of State, an associate justice of the Supreme Court, and our minister to England being of their number.

On May 8th the commission completed a treaty which was speedily ratified by both governments. It provided for arbitration upon the "Alabama Claims," upon other claims by citizens of either country for damages during the Rebellion, upon the fisheries, and upon the northwest boundary of the United States. Provisions were also made by it for the common use of the lakes, rivers, and canals along the Canadian border, and for the transit of merchandise free of duty, under certain conditions, across either country to and from certain ports.

The fisheries part of the treaty is discussed in the next chapter. The question of the northwest boundary was referred to the decision of the German emperor, William I. The treaty of 1846 had left it doubtful whether the boundary line through the channel between Vancouver Island and the mainland should be so run as to include the island of San Juan, with its group, in the United States or in Canada. The emperor's decision, given in 1872, was in favor of the United States.

Three commissioners—one appointed by each government and a third appointed jointly—met in Washington, September 26, 1871, to pass judg-

ment upon the war claims other than the "Alabama Claims." The American claims of this class, amounting to less than $1,000,000, were all rejected on the ground that the British Government was not proved responsible for the damages incurred. British subjects put in claims for $96,000,000. The commission allowed less than $2,000,000, which the United States Government promptly paid into the British treasury.

But far the most important and interesting part of the treaty was the provision for the settlement of the "Alabama Claims." England's unfriendly attitude during the war and her subsequent refusal to submit the "claims" to arbitration, had stirred up much hard feeling throughout the United States. The graceful expression, in the preamble to the treaty, of England's regret for the ravages of the cruisers was therefore very gratifying. More material satisfaction was to follow. The treaty provided that the claims should be submitted to a tribunal of five persons—one appointed by each government and one each by the Emperor of Brazil, the President of Switzerland, and the King of Italy.

The tribunal met at Geneva, Switzerland, December 15, 1871. Charles Francis Adams, our minister to England during the war, was the United States member, and Lord Chief Justice Cockburn the English. Baron Itajuba, the Brazilian minister plenipotentiary to France, Count Sclopis, an Italian minister of State, and M. Jaques Stæmpfli, of Switzerland, comprised the rest of the tribunal. Each side was represented by counsel, Caleb Cush-

ing, William M. Evarts, and Morrison R. Waite appearing for the United States. An agent presented the printed case of each government.

The American claim, included direct and indirect losses—direct, by the destruction of vessels with their cargoes and by national expenditure in chasing the confederate cruisers; indirect, by the loss of a large part of the United States ocean carrying trade, by increased marine insurance rates, and by the prolongation of the war with proportionally increased expense. Great Britain vehemently objected to the indirect claims coming before the tribunal, and at one time seemed about to withdraw. Upon reassembling in June, 1872, the tribunal decided that the indirect claims were not admissible, and the case went forward. Counsel having presented their respective arguments, the tribunal took up the case of each cruiser separately. During the consideration of damages it sat with closed doors, only the arbitrators being present. On September 14th, after thirty-two conferences, the tribunal gave its decision.

The Geneva case is of two-fold interest, first, for its decision of the facts involved, and the consequent award; second, for its enunciation of important principles of international law.

The treaty of Washington laid down three rules for the guidance of the tribunal. They are such important contributions to international law that they must be quoted in full.

"A neutral government is bound,

"First: To use due diligence to prevent the fitting out, arming or equipping, within its jurisdiction, of

any vessel which it has reasonable ground to believe is intended to cruise or to carry on war against a power with which it is at peace, and also to use like diligence to prevent the departure from its jurisdiction of any vessel intended to cruise or carry on war as above, such vessel having been specially adapted, in whole or in part, within such jurisdiction, to warlike use.

"Secondly: Not to permit or suffer either belligerent to make use of its ports or waters as the base of naval operations against the other, or for the purpose of the renewal or augmentation of military supplies or arms, or the recruitment of men.

"Thirdly: To exercise due diligence in its own ports and waters, and as to all persons within its jurisdiction, to prevent any violation of the foregoing obligations and duties."

Great Britain denied, in the text of the treaty, that these rules were a true statement of the principles of international law in force during the Rebellion, but consented that the "Alabama Claims" should be decided in accordance with them. Both countries also agreed to abide by them in future and to invite other maritime powers to do the same.

Questions being raised by the counsel as to the interpretation of certain terms and the scope of certain provisions in the three rules, the tribunal found it necessary to make the following preliminary decisions:

1. The meaning of "due diligence." The tribunal took the ground that what constitutes "due diligence" varies with the circumstances of the

case. The greater the probable damage to either belligerent, the greater must be the care taken by the neutral government to prevent the escape of cruisers from its ports.

2. Should a neutral detain an escaped cruiser when it re-enters the neutral's jurisdiction, the cruiser having in the meantime been regularly commissioned by its government? The arbitrators decided that the neutral had a right to detain such a cruiser, in spite of its commission, but was under no positive obligation to do so.

3. Does a neutral's responsibility end with the enforcement of its local laws to prevent the escape of cruisers, even if those laws are inadequate? Decision was given that the case must be determined by international law and not by national legislation. If a country's regulations for carrying out its acknowledged international duties are ineffective, they ought to be changed.

These decisions in international law, coming from so exalted a source, were of world-wide significance. The verdict on the facts in the case had, however, more immediate interest for the two contestants.

The American case claimed damages for losses inflicted by fourteen cruisers and four tenders. The award allowed for only the Alabama with her tender, the Florida, with her three tenders, and the Shenandoah during a part of her career. With regard to the Alabama the culpability of the British Government was so clearly shown that even the English arbitrator voted in favor of the American claim. The Florida was permitted to escape from Liverpool although Mr. Adams, the United States

minister, repeatedly called the attention of the authorities to her notorious warlike character. The vessel was, furthermore, libelled at Nassau, a British colonial port, but the British officials allowed her to take in supplies and put to sea. The Shenandoah set sail from Liverpool with the connivance of the Government, received her armament at the Madeira Islands, and after a destructive career was welcomed at the British port of Melbourne, repaired in a government slip, and furnished with supplies and recruits. The award held Great Britain responsible only for her career after leaving Melbourne.

The American case further claimed damages for national expense in chasing the cruisers, and for the prospective earnings of the lost merchantmen, but these claims, along with those explicitly denounced as indirect, were rejected.

The tribunal awarded $15,500,000 damages in gold for the vessels and cargoes destroyed by the three cruisers and their tenders. Of this sum, about $2,000,000 was interest at six per cent. The only dissenting voice was that of the British member, who submitted a long and able, but somewhat spiteful, minority report.

The award naturally gave great satisfaction in the United States. The money compensation was in itself a source of considerable gratulation; but the fact that stiff-backed England had by a clearly impartial tribunal of the highest character been declared in the wrong was not the least pleasurable side of the result. American citizens should never forget the services, in this delicate and diffi-

cult matter, of Mr. Adams. By his great knowledge of law, his careful gathering of evidence, and his brave, sturdy and incessant, though apparently useless, remonstrances with the British authorities while the cruisers were building and their depredations going on, he established a case which could not be gainsaid. Hardly had he opened his portfolio at Geneva when the learned arbitrators saw that his suit must be allowed.

England promptly handed over to the United States the price of her sympathy with rebellion and slavery. The course of Congress in dealing with the award was not very creditable. For four years the money lay in the treasury vaults, piling up interest at five per cent. until it amounted to $20,000,000. A Court of Alabama Claims was then convened, where private claimants might press their suits. Insurance companies which could show that their losses on vessels destroyed by the cruisers exceeded the premiums received, were entitled to be paid the difference, with interest at four per cent.

CHAPTER III.

THE FISHERIES DISPUTE

Our glance at the Treaty of Washington introduces us to an international complication which has been transmitted from the very birthday of the nation, and is, alas, still unsettled, spite of the earnest efforts to this end made since 1885. Article 3 of the treaty of 1783 was as follows: "It is agreed that the people of the United States shall continue to enjoy unmolested the right to take fish of every kind on the Grand Bank and on all the other banks of Newfoundland; also in the Gulf of St. Lawrence and at all other places in the sea where the inhabitants of both countries used at any time heretofore to fish; and also that the inhabitants of the United States shall have liberty to take fish of every kind on such part of the coast of Newfoundland as British fishermen shall use [but not to dry or cure the same on that island]; and also on the coasts, bays, and creeks of all other of his Britannic Majesty's dominions in America, and that the American fishermen shall have liberty to dry and cure fish in any of the unsettled bays, harbors, and creeks of Nova Scotia, Magdalen Islands, and Labrador, so long as the same shall remain unsettled; but so soon as the

same, or either of them, shall be settled, it shall not be lawful for the said fishermen to dry or cure fish at such settlement without a previous agreement for that purpose with the inhabitants, proprietors, or possessors of the ground."

This provision conveyed to fishermen from the United States two valuable privileges—that of fishing in British waters, namely, within three miles of the British coast, and that of drying and curing fish, wherever caught, upon certain convenient parts of the British coast. They had, of course, like the men of all nations, apart from any treaty stipulation, the right to fish outside the three mile limit, but this would avail them nothing, under the then mode of conducting the industry, unless they could freely make harbor in case of storm, and also land to cure their catch before lading it for the homeward cruise. What worth these rights had will be clear if we remember that fishing had always been one of New England's foremost trades, and that the waters off Newfoundland and Nova Scotia had from, and probably before, Columbus's time been known as the richest fishing grounds of the globe.

The commissioners at Ghent, who drew up the treaty ending the War of 1812, wrangled long over the question whether or not the war had nullified the just cited Article 3 of 1783. Unable to agree, they signed their treaty without deciding the question, leaving this for the future to settle as it might. Great Britain held that our former rights had lapsed by the war, and excluded our fishing vessels from the bays, harbors, and creeks named

above. Several of our vessels were arrested on charge of trespass. The utmost tension still existed, in spite of the peace, especially as in the United States the view prevailed that our rights by the old treaty had outlived the war, notwithstanding the silence of the Ghent document.

At length, in 1818, a new treaty was entered into upon the question, signed October 20th, ratified by England November 2d, and by the United States January 28, 1819. This instrument ignored our contention that Article 3 of the treaty of 1783 was of perpetual obligation, and restricted our right to fish in shore to the southern shores of the Magdalen Islands, the west and southwest coasts of Newfoundland from the Rameau Islands round to Quirpon Island, and the Labrador coast from Mount Joly northward. Only here could our fishermen fish within the three mile limit, and they could dry and cure only on the named parts of Labrador and Newfoundland, Magdalen Islands being now excluded from this use. Even on Labrador and Newfoundland the privilege of drying and curing was to be cut off by settlement, except as agreement should be made beforehand with the inhabitants.

But the fateful clause of this treaty was the following: "And the United States hereby renounce forever any liberty heretofore enjoyed or claimed by the inhabitants thereof, to take, dry, or cure fish on or within three marine miles of any of the coasts, bays, creeks, or harbors of his Britannic Majesty's dominions in America not included within the above-mentioned limits: Pro-

vided, however, that the American fishermen shall be admitted to enter such bays or harbors for the purpose of shelter and of repairing damages therein, of purchasing wood, and of obtaining water, *and for no other purposes whatever.* But they shall be under such restrictions as may be necessary to prevent their taking, drying, or curing fish therein, or in any other manner whatever abusing the privileges hereby reserved to them."

Troubles were soon as abundant as ever. The Canadians applied the word "bay" to all indentations of their coast, affecting entirely to exclude our fishermen from great bodies of water like Fundy, Chaleurs, and Miramichi, however far parts of these might be from shore. This was the famous "headland theory" for defining national waters. They also denied our right to navigate the Gut of Canso, which separates Cape Breton Island from Nova Scotia, thus forcing far out of their nearest course our ships bound for the permitted inshore fisheries. United States fishermen on their part persisted in exploiting the great bays, landed upon the Magdalen Islands, pushed through the Gut, and were none too careful at any point to find or heed the three-mile line.

June 5, 1854, was signed a treaty of reciprocity between the United States and the British provinces, under which all the coasts of British North America were opened to our fishing vessels, in return for similar liberty to those of the provinces in all United States waters north of Cape May, latitude 36°, the salmon and shad fisheries of each

country being, however, reserved to itself. This arrangement was to continue ten years at least, and then to be terminable on a year's notice by either of the high contracting parties. Such notice having been given by the United States one year before, reciprocity in fishing privilege came to an end March 7, 1865. This, of course, renewed the wry and perplexing rules of the 1818 convention, with all the naturally consequent strife. The worst evils were, indeed, put off for a time, by a continuance to our vessels of the right to fish in provincial water on the payment of a small license fee. This favor was taken away in 1870, for the alleged reason that American captains failed to procure licenses, and in the course of this year many of our ships were seized and confiscated. New sternness had been imparted to the provincial policy by the Canadian Act of Confederation, valid from July 1, 1867, which joined Ontario and Quebec with Nova Scotia and New Brunswick, thus inspiring our neighbors to the north with a new sense of their strength and importance.

Now came the Treaty of Washington, 1871. Its Article 18 revived Article 1 of the 1854 Reciprocity Treaty, except that Canadians could now go so far south as the 39th parallel, and that two years' notice must precede abrogation. Article 21 ordained between the two countries free trade in fish-oil and in all salt-water fish. Both sides assumed that mere reciprocity would advantage the United States the more, so that by Article 22 a commission was provided for to award Canada a

proper balance in money. By bungling diplomacy on our part the real power in this commission was swayed by M. Maurice Delfosse, Belgian minister at Washington, a gentleman certain to favor Great Britain at our expense. As a consequence, we were forced to pay for reciprocity to the round note of $5,500,000. The money was a trifle; but its exorbitant amount had the unhappy effect of prejudicing our people against the new arrangement. The result was that at the earliest possible moment, viz., July 1, 1883, our Government gave the notice necessary for its abrogation. This followed on July 1, 1885, in the very midst of the fishing season. A temporary diplomatic arrangement was effected, which continued to our fishermen for the remainder of 1885 the advantages of the recent treaty; but with the dawn of the new year, 1886, the old convention of 1818 came once more into operation.

So soon as the fishing season was opened the plan of the British Government was evident. It was to deny the fishing vessels all facilities not guaranteed by the treaty of 1818—that is, fishing vessels of the United States would be permitted to enter Canadian ports for shelter, repairs, wood, and water, and "for no other purposes whatever;" also to compel all such vessels strictly to conform to both customs and port laws. Circular letters of instruction, enjoining vigilance, were sent to all customs officers, and swift cruisers fitted out to look sharply after all fishing vessels from the States. On the other hand our fishermen were not, as a whole, disposed to conform to

the existing regulations. The Treaty of Washington had been abrogated at their request, and now many, probably most, of them were inclined to exercise all the liberty possible in the Canadian waters. Least of all were they willing to submit to the British interpretation of the Treaty of 1818.

Complaints early reached Washington that the headland theory was being applied by the provincial customs officials to exclude our vessels from legitimate fishing places; but the Canadian Government denied that any such thing had been done by its authority, and evidently did not incline to push its old contention on this point. While the fishing schooner, Marion Grimes, of Gloucester, Mass., was under detention at Shelburne, Nova Scotia, for an infraction of the customs rules, her captain having hoisted the United States' flag, this was pulled down by order of the Canadian officer in temporary charge of her. The flag was again hoisted and again forcibly lowered. This act awakened great resentment in the United States, until it, too, was disavowed by the Governor-General in Council. The Sarah H. Prior lost at sea a valuable net, which a Canadian schooner picked up and wished to return. This was forbidden, and being permitted to purchase no other seine, the ship came home with a broken voyage and in debt. Captain Tupper, of the Jeannie Seaverns, having entered the harbor of Liverpool, Nova Scotia, for shelter, was denied permission to go and see his relatives near by or to receive them aboard his vessel. The water-tank of the schooner

Mollie Adams having burst, her captain sought to buy two or three barrels to hold water for his crew on their homeward voyage of five hundred miles. His request was refused.

The same Mollie Adams found a Nova Scotia vessel in distress and rescued her crew. Captain Jacobs, of the Mollie, cared for the men several days, and finally, as no assistance of any sort was proffered by the Canadians, sent them home at his own expense. His aid to them delayed his homeward journey, and he was also caught in a harbor from which his vessel could pass only during very high water, which caused further delay. Owing to these incidents his supply of provisions ran low, yet he was denied permission to purchase anything, and as a result his homeward tour was made on half rations or less. Many other aggravating circumstances were connected with this case.

In quite a number of instances American masters were refused water, the only excuse being that they had not conformed to all the port or customs regulations. There can be no doubt that many fishing captains were quite too lax in this, presuming on the power of their nation and remembering the liberties enjoyed under reciprocity, while too forgetful of the stern letter of the treaty which the Canadians were executing against them. It was plain on the other hand that however wrongly Canadian subalterns may at times have acted, both the Canadian and the British Government intended to keep within the letter of the law, while forcing us to fish off their coasts at as great a disadvantage as possible.

The real source of the difficulty was well characterized by Mr. Phelps, our Minister to England. "It is to be found in the irritation that has taken place among a portion of the Canadian people on account of the termination by the United States Government of the treaty of Washington on the 1st of July, 1885, whereby fish imported from Canada into the United States, which so long as that treaty remained in force was admitted free, is now liable to the import duty provided by the general revenue laws; and the opinion appears to have gained ground in Canada that the United States may be driven, by harassing and annoying their fishermen, into the adoption of a new treaty, by which Canadian fish shall be admitted free."

In their efforts to carry out such a policy the treaty gave the Canadians a very great advantage. As Mr. Secretary Bayard insisted, it certainly transgressed usual international comity when our ships were refused needed pilots, or our hungry crews were forbidden to purchase food in Canadian ports; but our President and Senate had, in 1818, agreed that such cruelty should be legal. To ask for comity in the matter was to ask for the voidance of the treaty.

As little could we, agreeably to the treaty, presume, by use of home permits to "touch and trade," to turn a fishing vessel at will into a merchant vessel, as was often tried in order to evade the offensive restrictions, or demand the liberty of freighting fish home overland in bond. It would equally have amounted to a quashing of the treaty, had the British and Canadians interpreted it by the easy

canon of Mr. Phelps : "The question is not what is the technical effect of the words, but what is the construction most consonant to the dignity, the just interests, and the friendly relations of the sovereign powers."

Interesting but also untenable was our Government's plea for freedom to purchase bait for deep-sea fishing. Of old, mackerel had been caught almost solely with hooks, by the "chumming" process. In 1850 the purse seine was introduced. Soon after 1870 its use became general, and entirely revolutionized the business of taking mackerel. Huge quantities of the fish could now be captured far out in the open sea, making fishing much more profitable near home, and greatly lessening the value to us of Canada's fishing-grounds. From these premises Mr. Bayard argued that the true intent of the 1818 agreement, which was to protect inshore fishing territory, would not be violated should we be allowed to buy bait in Canada. It was replied that the old treaty was meant to prevent our fishermen from making Canadian harbors in any way a base of operations.

"It was framed with the object of affording a complete and exclusive definition of the rights and liberties which the fishermen of the United States were thenceforward to enjoy in following their vocation, so far as those rights could be affected by facilities for access to the shores or waters of the British Provinces, or for intercourse with their people. It is therefore no undue expansion of the scope of that convention to interpret strictly those of its provisions by which such access is denied,

except to vessels requiring it for the purposes specifically described. Such an undue expansion would, upon the other hand, certainly take place if, under cover of its provisions, or of any agreements relating to general commercial intercourse which may have since been made, permission were accorded to United States fishermen to resort habitually to the harbors of the Dominion, not for the sake of seeking safety for their vessels or of avoiding risk to human life, but in order to use those harbors as a general base of operations from which to prosecute and organize with greater advantage to themselves the industry in which they are engaged.

"Mr. Bayard suggests that the possession by a fishing vessel of a permit to 'touch and trade,' should give her a right to enter Canadian ports for other than the purposes named in the treaty, or, in other words, should give her perfect immunity from its provisions. This would amount to a practical repeal of the treaty, because it would enable a United States collector of customs, by issuing a license, originally only intended for purposes of domestic customs regulation, to give exemption from the treaty to every United States fishing vessel. The observation that similar vessels under the British flag have the right to enter the ports of the United States for the purchase of supplies loses its force when it is remembered that the convention of 1818 contained no restriction on British vessels, and no renunciation of any privileges in regard to them."

For some weeks in the spring and summer of

1886, the fishery dispute greatly excited our country. Even threats of war with Canada were uttered in case its government should not recede from its aggravating position, and careful estimates made of the force we could throw across our northern border in three days. In May, 1886, Congress placed in the President's hands power to suspend commercial intercourse between the two countries. Later in the year a bill was introduced in the House cutting off all commercial relations with Canada by land or water. The Senate advanced a more moderate proposition, to limit the proposed arrest of traffic to water commerce and to Canadian vessels, also to leave its enforcement optional with the President. This became law on March 3, 1887. Under this legislation the President, on being assured that fishing masters or crews were treated in Canadian ports any less favorably than masters or crews of trading vessels from the most favored nations, could, "in his discretion, by proclamation to that effect, deny vessels, their masters and crews, of the British dominions of North America, any entrance into the waters, ports, or places of or within the United States."

The President, however, did not think best at once to use this fearful power, likely enough to lead to war. He preferred to make another attempt at a peaceful settlement, through a new treaty. This had constantly been the wish of the British Government. Accordingly, later in the year 1887, a joint commission, consisting of Secretary Bayard, President Angell, of Michigan University, Hon. William L. Putnam, of Maine, on the part

of the United States, and of Rt. Hon. Joseph Chamberlain, Sir Charles Tupper, of Canada, and Sir Lionel West, the British minister, on the part of Great Britain, met at Washington. The commission toiled nearly all winter and passed to the President the result of its deliberations on February 16, 1888.

The treaty which it drafted was necessarily a compromise. Canada thought the British commissioners had yielded too much; many in the United States believed our commissioners to have done the same. The document, approved by the President, went to the Senate, where, after long debate, it was refused ratification, August 21st.

The commission had agreed upon a *modus vivendi*, to hold good, unless revoked by the Governor-General and Council of Canada, till February, 1890, under which our fishermen might obtain in Canadian ports, on payment of a license, the privileges of merchantmen. Many such licenses were taken out during the season of 1888, showing the advantages which they conveyed. Most of the fishing-masters, however, did not seek licenses and were averse to the new treaty, preferring the terms of 1818 to granting their rivals any further rights in our markets. Fresh fish, including frozen and slack-salted, was already free in our ports, competing sharply with our own catch. No one longer cared to fish inside, or, except in emergencies, to provision at Canadian towns. Convenient as would be the power to obtain bait near the fishing-grounds and to trans-ship fish home in bond, neither was indispensable. Cod are still

caught with trawls and baited hooks. The best bait is squid, whose abundance upon the Banks is what causes the cod so to frequent them. The squid can be had freshest as well as cheapest from the peasantry of the Newfoundland and Nova Scotia coasts; but clams carried from home were found to do nearly as well. They would remain fresh better than squid, but got off the hooks more easily. Accordingly, few collisions occurred in 1888, and as the season of that year closed there was prospect that, even without a new convention, no necessity for American retaliation would arise.

This chapter shall close with a word touching the Alaska fisheries question, which, fortunately, has at last been settled. In 1870 the United States leased the Pribylov, or Seal Islands off Alaska, to the Alaska Commercial Co. Pressed by this company, which naturally wished the completest possible monopoly of seal-fishing, our Government foolishly affected to treat the entire Bering Sea as a *mare clausum*, belonging to the United States. Several British craft engaged in taking seals were seized by United States vessels considerably more than three miles from land. Great Britain of course protesting, a treaty, ratified in March, 1892, submitted to arbitration the question between the two governments. Seven arbitrators sat, two from the United States, Justice Harlan and Senator Morgan, and one each from Canada, Great Britain, Sweden, France, and Italy. This Board decided against the American contention, denying the right of the United States to assume the protection of seals or any property in them outside

the ordinary three mile limit. Happy provisions were, however, made for a joint police of Bering Sea by the two nations, for an open and a closed fishing season, and for the careful licensing of sealing vessels.

CHAPTER IV.

THE NEW SOUTH

It cannot be denied that the radical method of reconstruction resorted to by Congress occasioned dreadful evils. Among other things it ignored the natural prejudices of the whites, many of whom were as loyal as any citizens in the land. The South, subjected to a second conquest after having laid down its arms, felt outraged and grew sullen. To most people in that section, as well as to very many at the North, this dictation by Congress to acknowledged States in time of peace seemed high-handed and guilty usurpation. Northern Congressmen incessantly called slavery barbarism, and yet combined to transmute to-day into electors and law-makers those who but yesterday had been slaves. Black legislatures inevitably abused their power, becoming the instruments of base carpet-bag leaders and rings in robbing white property-holders.

Nor could any except doctrinaires or the stupid have expected that the whites would long submit to such a *régime*. If the South was to become again genuine part and parcel of this Union, it could not, nor would the North consent that it should, be permanently under bayonet rule; and so

soon as bayonets were gone, fair means or foul would speedily remove the sceptre from colored hands. Precisely this happened. In State after State, the whites, without the slightest formal change of constitution or law, recovered their ancient ascendency. Where their aims could not be realized by persuasion or other mild means, resort was had to merciless intimidation and violence.

The Ku-Klux Klan, a great secret society, was organized for this rough business, numbering at first, among either its members or its abettors, citizens of the highest respectability. Its local lodges were called "dens," its members "ghouls." "Giants," "goblins," "titans," "furies," "dragons," and "hydras," were names of different classes among its officers. Usually the very existence of a "den" in the vicinity was sufficient to render every negro docile. If more was required, a half-dozen ghouls, making their nocturnal rounds in their hideous masks and uniforms, frightened all but the most hardy. Any who showed fight were whipped, maimed, or killed, treatment which extended on occasion to their "carpet-bag" and "scallawag" friends—these titles denoting respectively northern and southern men bold enough to take the negroes' side. The very violence of the order, which it at last turned against the old Southrons themselves, brought it into disrepute with its original instigators, who were not sorry when federal marshals, put up to it by President Grant, hunted den after den of the law-breakers to the death.

Yet, after all, one cannot see how the giant problem of resuscitating the South could, under the circumstances, have been solved more successfully. The plan proposed by President Johnson had sufficient trial to show that it must have led to ills worse than those actually experienced. A qualified colored suffrage would, as things then were, have been abused. It must be remembered that the war left in the South much less of white loyalty than it found, and Congress was certainly justified in insisting that the revived States should be placed on the most loyal basis possible.

Withal, considering the stupendous upheaval in southern society marked by the erection of bondmen into full citizens, dark days were few. Schools arose, partly from the application of a large fund left by Mr. George Peabody for that purpose, partly from the beneficence of the various religious denominations interested in the elevation of the blacks, and partly from provision by the southern States themselves. The ballot itself proved an educator, rough but thorough. The negro vote, now that it had become a fixed fact, was little by little courted by the jarring factions of whites, and hence protected. Political parties, particularly in state elections, more and more divided on other lines than that of color. The administration of President Cleveland taught the negro that even in National affairs he had nothing to fear from democratic dominance. And it was plainly to the freedman's infinite advantage, meanwhile, that he was fighting not to acquire status and rights, but for acquired status and rights guar-

anteed in the organic law of his State and the Nation.

Among the white people loyalty to the old flag increased with the days. Of course none of them would ever confess regret at having drawn the sword, or cease to think of the lost cause with a sigh. At the same time a rational conviction settled down upon all its most thoughtful minds that in secession the South had been misguided. Universal was the admission that at least for the dominant race the death of slavery was a blessing. Northern people and intelligent immigrants from Europe thronged in. Coolly received at first, and in some cases maltreated if freely expressing opinions which traversed those prevalent in the section, in the end they were tolerated and even welcomed.

The multiplication of railways facilitated the acquaintance of southern with northern people far beyond what had been possible before the war. Travelling salesmen from the North penetrated the remotest hamlets at the South, inclined from every consideration to produce the most favorable impression possible. The selection of southerners for important national offices by Presidents Grant, Hayes, Arthur, and Cleveland, the election of the last-named, a Democrat, as President in 1884 and 1892, and the existence of a democratic majority in the House of Representatives almost constantly from 1874, all felicitously combined to beget in the people of the South a conviction that they were really and truly citizens of the Union again. The rise in several southern States of a strong republican organization among the whites wrought

in the same direction. Nor must we overlook as another cementing influence the fraternizing of northern and southern soldiers in great reunions such as occurred at Gettysburg, Richmond, and other places.

The South's material prosperity kept pace with her political peace. It had always been said that cotton was to be produced only by slave labor. Nothing could have been more false. The largest cotton crop under slavery, that of 1860, reached 4,669,770 bales. In 1871, 1876, and 1877 each, notwithstanding the economic chaos and the infinite destruction of capital occasioned by the war, those figures were almost equalled; in 1878 they were surpassed; in 1879 and 1880 each, over 5,000,000 bales were raised; in 1881, 1883, and 1886 each, over 6,000,000, the exact figure for the year last named being 6,550,215. In 1890, 7,472,511 bales were produced.

This cotton exhibit is sufficiently gratifying, yet the post-bellum crops might have been far larger had not much energy at the South been happily diverted into manufacturing channels. This is one of the most hopeful features of the New South. Nearly every department of industry in this kind is now pushed there at many points. Nashville has become a great manufacturing and commercial city. It boasts one of the largest foundries in the country, and several flourishing cotton factories. Chattanooga, Birmingham, and Anniston are all thrifty with iron and steel industries, which rival the most prosperous ones at the North; nor are there wanting those who predict that the region of

those cities, viz., Southern Tennessee with Northern Georgia and Alabama, is speedily to become the centre of iron and steel production for the world.

The lumber trade of Chattanooga, particularly in the white woods, is said to be second only to Chicago's. The city also has a tannery believed to be the largest in the world, and more than one fully appointed Bessemer steel manufactory. These steel works and the tannery employ colored operatives almost alone, many of them exceedingly skilful. Birmingham is entirely a creation of the days since the war, yet it has already more than twenty-six thousand inhabitants against three thousand in 1880, and enjoys marvellous prosperity, hindered only by speculation in land. Much of the marble in the mountains of Tennessee, Alabama, and Georgia is finer than any elsewhere to be found in this country. The block of it which was forwarded from Alabama for the Washington monument, experts condemned for the purpose as certainly Italian, nor was it permitted a place in that structure till the Governor of the State and the Members of Congress therefrom had certified upon honor, and the quarry-masters made affidavit, that it came out of the Alabama hills. Atlanta has risen from the ashes in which the war left it, to be a city of over sixty-five thousand people, with every manifestation of great industrial life and progress.

Between 1870 and 1880, although the population of Mobile decreased, that of Charleston rose about 1⅓ per cent., that of Savannah about 5¼ per

cent., that of New Orleans about thirteen per cent., that of Richmond about twenty-six per cent. Between 1880 and 1890 Mobile advanced about 6½ per cent., Charleston almost 10 per cent., Savannah over 40 per cent., New Orleans over 12 per cent., and Richmond exactly 28 per cent.

It would be misleading to suppose the progress in welfare indicated by these and the foregoing statements to be true of every district at the South. The merely agricultural regions are still far behind. Methods of tilling the soil are the same as prevailed forty years ago, and it is not unlikely that the colored people, who for the most part have the immediate charge of this work, prosecute it, as yet, with less skill than did overseers and planters before slavery was done away. Yet in 1890 the farm valuation of the South was found to exceed its highest ante-bellum figure and almost to equal one-fifth of the entire farm valuation of the country.

To the general backwardness of southern agriculture, there is one quite striking exception. The State of Florida has undergone, of late years, a most astounding transition for the better. Her total railway mileage of 416 miles when the war ended had grown to 2,470 miles by 1890. The farm valuation was, in 1880, twenty and one-half million dollars. The population in 1890 exceeded that of 1880 by almost 50 per cent. Steamboats are upon every coast and river. This is due not alone to the State's popularity as a winter sanitarium for northern people. It is also the early market-garden for the North. Its oranges largely supply

the trade, and are much sought for their excellent quality. It is excessively rich in the finest ornamental woods, which are rapidly finding their way into the market. Nearly all the crops of the temperate zone and the fruits of the torrid flourish here with the utmost luxuriance, many of them being natives, others taking to the soil with a greater friendliness than they displayed for that whence they were transplanted. Fully fifty varieties of sub-tropical trees which grow nowhere else in the Union adorn Florida's keys and coasts. The State bids fair to rival Louisiana in the production of sugar, and South Carolina in that of rice, as well as one day to supply the entire American demand for cocoanuts. The mulberry is indigenous to every part of this new Eden, which may, therefore, at no late date become an immense producer of raw silk. Cattle feed and fatten everywhere without shelter, in winter as in summer.

The future of the colored race no one can predict with certainty. After the census of 1870, which reduced the percentage of our African population from 14.1, the figure in 1860, to 12.7, many rushed to the conclusion that these people might, in no long time, vanish from our land. The census of 1880 dispelled this fancy, raising the percentage again to 13.1, while that of 1890 raised it to 13.5. Previously to 1870 the race had been constantly decreasing in fecundity, but the better conditions afforded by freedom may have changed this. Even should the decrease go on, the colored people would be at least eight or ten per cent. of

our total population by 1900. As the climatic area where they have any advantages over whites in the fight of life is less than this per cent., their success in the struggle will depend on their power to compete with the rival blood in higher callings than hand labor. Their promise so to improve is, on the whole, good, and, as educational appliances on their behalf multiply, must grow better and better.

LIBRARY OF THE BOMBAY BRANCH OF THE ROYAL ASIATIC SOCIETY.

CHAPTER V.

THE NEW WEST

ASIDE from West Virginia, made during the war from the loyal part of Virginia, the new States taken into the Union since 1860 are Kansas, 1861; Nevada, 1864; Nebraska, 1867; Colorado, 1876; North Dakota, 1889; South Dakota, 1889; Idaho, 1890; Montana, 1889; Washington, 1889; and Wyoming, 1890. The whole number of States has thus become forty-four. We have also, in the year 1894, four organized territories, Arizona, New Mexico, Utah, and Oklahoma, carved out of Indian Territory in the year 1890. Alaska is as yet a partially organized territory, having no territorial legislature, and being under the laws of the United States and of the State of Oregon. It was purchased by the United States from Russia, in 1867, for the sum of $7,200,000. It remained without any organization until the act of May 17, 1884, which gave it a governor, a district court, an attorney, a marshal, and commissioners.

The value to our Union of this new acquisition, with its 531,409 square miles and a coast-line longer than that upon our Atlantic and Gulf coasts together, was at first doubtful, and may be pronounced to some extent so even now. Yet the

money was evidently not thrown away. Governor Swineford, appointed over the Territory in 1885, declares that throughout Southern Alaska and the Aleutian Islands the climate is moderate, even in winter; and he gives records of thermometrical observations which seem to prove this. He further maintains that, in the parts named, all our hardier plants and crops grow to maturity in summer, and attain an extraordinary luxuriance. In 1890, 4,298 white people had homes in Alaska, besides 1,823 mixed, 23,531 Indians, and 2,288 Mongolians, a total population of 32,052.

The Alaska Commercial Company pays the United States $55,000 yearly for its monopoly of the Alaska seal-fur trade. The product of this business is about $2,500,000 each year. An official report made to our Government states that in the year 1880, $2,181,832 worth of Alaska furs found sale in London alone. Coal has been discovered in various places. So has beautiful white marble. Gold-bearing ledges are numerous, and the only one of these yet broached, that on Douglas Island, has certainly yielded well. The mill connected with it, working only the equivalent of two-thirds time, turned out during its first twelve months a little over $750,000 worth of gold bullion. For the year 1889, from somewhat imperfect returns, the product from this remote patch of our national domain was as follows: Seal fisheries, $314,925, a falling off of over eighty per cent. in nine years; other fisheries, $1,059,365, an increase of about one hundred per cent. for the same period; 43,762 troy ounces of gold and 9,219 troy ounces of sil-

ver. In 1890 there were ten manufacturing establishments, whose product amounted to $58,440.

Since 1860 there has been a steady filling up of the Pacific coast, and an equally continual extension of population to the west on this side the Rockies. All Iowa is reclaimed, and all Minnesota but the extreme northwest corner. The rate of interest has in fifteen years gone down in Iowa from ten to seven or eight per cent., in Michigan from ten to six or seven per cent. Chicago, from being only a borrower of money, has grown to be an immense lender for enterprises in the West. Settlement in Kansas, Nebraska, and Texas has gone westward with strength and rapidity. Some of Nebraska's finest new towns, like Hastings, are well toward the State's extreme western border.

The construction of the five great Pacific railway lines, the Northern, the Union, the Atlantic and Pacific, the Southern, and the Great Northern, with their various branches, has brought into valuable employ infinite reaches of fertile land previously as good as desert. Texas has made most remarkable advance both in square miles occupied and in density of population, brought about by great extension of railway mileage, and of cattle, sheep, and wheat culture. Large patches of Dakota, Montana, and Idaho are filled with settlers. Colorado is a giant in production, the rush of population thither in consequence of the very extensive and rich mineral discoveries about Leadville, having been a stampede almost like that of 1849–50 to California. Every hill was black with miners. The growth of New Mexico, Arizona, and

Nevada, considering their natural wealth, has been slow, owing in part to Indian hostilities. Thus New Mexico has fallen from rank 37 in 1870 to rank 43 in 1890. Tucson, Ariz., according to the best figures, also fell off between 1880 and 1887, from ten thousand to seventy-five hundred inhabitants. In material things Utah prospers greatly under the thrift, economy, and hard work of the Mormons. Here mining and speculation are less rigidly pressed, and more energy devoted to agricultural pursuits.

In California, a smaller proportion than formerly of all industry is now applied to mining, a larger to agriculture and cattle-raising. Its southern part is becoming the competitor of Florida as a winter residence. Oregon and Washington vie with Minnesota for the world-medal in wheat culture. Over the infinite pasture lands at both feet of the Rocky Mountains roam herds of bullocks destined to feed distant cities in America and in Europe. Many of these lands will in the course of time be ploughed, and by the aid of irrigation turned into corn fields, wheat fields, and market gardens, a process which in New Mexico has already gone far. Not all, of course, can be utilized. There is a tract enclosed by the parallels 31° and 45° and the meridians 100° and 120°, which seems destined for perpetual sterility, although many enterprises have been conceived, and some, like the scheme of the Colorado River Irrigation Company, initiated for redeeming it. Crops grow there only under constant irrigation, and permanent water-supplies are painfully scarce. Next to no

woodland exists save close by the few streams, and of the scanty trees which grow scarcely a single variety of hard wood is found.

Texas and Wyoming also have each a small precious-metal product. The region comprised in the States and Territories above named is not only our richest precious-metal field, but one of the very richest on the globe. The picture presented above is too glowing for the year 1893–94, during which great depression afflicted the whole West; but the hope is that this will be only temporary.

The city of San Francisco had 500 inhabitants in 1840, 34,776 in 1850, 56,802 in 1860, 149,473 in 1870, 233,959 in 1880, 298,997 in 1890. This progress may be taken as in some sense an index of that of the West as a whole, far more so than the apparently spasmodic increase of some of California's smaller centres. Los Angeles has mounted from a population of 5,728 in 1870, and of 11,183 in 1880, to one of 50,395 in 1890. Oakland had but 10,500 in 1870. Ten years later the figure was 34,555; and in 1890 it was 48,682. Stockton leaped from 10,287 in 1880 to 14,424 in 1890. In 1858 Denver was uninhabited. In 1870 it numbered 4,759 souls; in 1880, 35,629; in 1890, 106,713. Portland, far up in Oregon, numbers 46,000 inhabitants. In the decade 1880–90 Wyoming grew from 20,789 to 60,705.

The growth and prosperity of this great western section of our country becomes apparent from an inspection of the following table, compiled from authentic sources:

States.	Population.		Property valuation.		Value of Farms.		Railway mileage. Miles.		Number of periodicals.		Gold product. Troy Oz.		Silver product. Troy Oz.	
	1870.	1890.	1880.	1890.	1880.	1890.	1885.	1890.	1880.	1893.	1880.	1889.	1880.	1889.
California	560,247	1,208,130	$1,348,000,000	$2,533,788,627	$262,051,282	$697,116,630	3,044	4,356	364	639	829,677	608,882	890,158	1,062,578
Colorado	39,864	412,198	240,000,000	1,145,712,267	25,109,223	85,035,180	2,884	4,176	90	298	130,608	187,881	12,800,120	18,375,551
Dakota, North	14,181	182,719	118,000,000	337,006,506	22,401,084	75,310,805	2,877	2,003	66	139	159,920	.....	54,770	.....
Dakota, South		328,808		425,141,299		107,466,335		2,470		269		149,533		104,672
Idaho	14,999	84,385	29,000,000	207,896,591	2,832,890	17,431,580	....	944	8	58	71,578	95,963	359,309	3,137,508
Kansas	364,399	1,427,096	760,000,000	1,799,343,501	235,178,936	559,726,046	4,441	8,806	349	759	.....	.....	.....	.....
Minnesota	439,706	1,301,826	792,000,000	1,691,851,927	193,724,260	340,059,470	4,331	5,379	224	558	.....	.....	.....	.....
Montana	20,595	132,159	40,000,000	453,135,209	3,234,504	25,512,340	1,047	2,181	18	90	87,354	151,861	2,246,938	13,511,455
Nebraska	122,993	1,058,910	385,000,000	1,275,685,514	105,932,541	402,358,913	2,988	5,300	189	645	.....	.....	.....	.....
Nevada	42,491	45,761	156,000,000	180,323,668	5,408,325	12,339,410	945	924	37	26	236,469	169,617	9,614,561	4,696,605
New Mexico	91,874	153,593	49,000,000	231,459,897	5,514,399	8,140,800	1,795	1,324	18	59	2,387	89,457	908,455	1,251,124
Oregon	90,923	313,767	154,000,000	590,396,194	56,908,575	115,819,200	1,181	1,433	74	194	53,101	46,648	21,496	17,851
Texas	818,579	2,235,523	825,000,000	2,105,576,766	170,468,886	399,971,289	6,687	8,630	279	678	.....	330	.....	323,433
Utah	86,786	207,905	114,000,000	349,411,234	14,015,178	28,402,780	1,085	1,085	24	71	14,105	23,591	3,668,566	7,005,193
Washington	23,955	349,390	62,000,000	760,698,726	13,844,224	88,461,660	736	1,774	29	253	6,569	9,005	789	28,464
Wyoming	9,118	60,705	54,000,000	169,773,710	835,895	14,460,880	617	941	10	43	888	711	.....	.....
Territories.														
Alaska	.....	32,052	.....	.....	.....	.....	....	....	....	4	288	43,762	89	9,219
Arizona	9,658	59,620	41,000,000	188,880,976	1,127,946	7,222,230	906	1,096	17	35	10,254	44,029	1,798,921	1,812,961

We shall be pardoned for recurring again to Minnesota. So recently as 1838, where St. Paul and Minneapolis now stand, the former with a population in 1890 of 133,156, the latter with one of 164,738, not a white man's abode had risen. There were then but three cabins between St. Paul and Prairie du Chien, a distance of 300 miles down the Mississippi. Summit Avenue, St. Paul, is now the finest street on the continent, if not on the globe. West St. Paul in 1880 was a hamlet of a few huts; now it boasts 20,000 to 30,000 people, with street-cars, large business blocks, fine houses and stores. The pioneer railway in Minnesota was laid in 1862, from St. Paul to St. Anthony, the first shovelful of earth being lifted by a citizen of St. Paul, who, if he still lives, sees his State gridironed with 5,379 miles of track, his own firm constructing over 1,100 miles in the single year 1887. Minneapolis in 1887 turned out 5,000,000 barrels of flour, an average of 100,000 barrels a week.

Duluth had but 3,740 people in 1880. In 1890, 33,115. The cause of Duluth's advantage is obvious upon a glance at the map. It is by water no farther from Lake Erie than Chicago is, while it is some hundreds of miles nearer the great wheat field. It is itself the very gate of this—the gate of Minnesota—which in 1869 brought forth eighteen million bushels, in 1886, fifty million bushels. To this enormous yield that of Dakota, about the same, has now to be added, the one as the other finding its way out to the hungry world largely through Duluth.

The caravans of people necessary to populate

these immense western ranges have been to a very great extent immigrants from Europe. The census of 1880 gave us 6,679,043 inhabitants of foreign nativity. We have no figures for the exact proportion of the total immigration into the country which has found its home here, yet a glimpse at the total from year to year is interesting at this point. The falling off in 1893 is particularly noticeable. Immigrants arrived as follows:

In 1868	282,189	In 1880	457,257
" 1869	352,768	" 1881	669,431
" 1870	387,203	" 1882	788,992
" 1871	321,350	" 1883	603,322
" 1872	404,806	" 1884	518,592
" 1873	459,803	" 1885	395,346
" 1874	313,339	" 1886	334,203
" 1875	227,498	" 1890	455,302
" 1876	169,986	" 1891	560,319
" 1877	141,857	" 1892	579,663
" 1878	138,469	" 1893	440,793
" 1879	177,826		

CHAPTER VI.

EXPOSITIONS OF 1876 AND 1893

IT was fitting that the one hundredth anniversary of a great industrial nation should be celebrated by a World's Fair. Such a plan was first publicly proposed for the United States in 1870, by an association of Philadelphia citizens. It was adopted by Congress in the following year, when an act was passed creating a Centennial Commission, to consist of a delegate and an alternate from each State and Territory. The commission organized for the great and difficult work before them by choosing General J. R. Hawley, of Connecticut, president, and by appointing an executive committee, a board of directors, and heads of various administrative bureaus.

The Government declined to assume the financial responsibility of the enterprise, but in 1872 Congress appointed a Centennial Board of Finance with power to raise a capital stock of $10,000,000. Shares to the amount of $2,400,000 were soon sold to private citizens. Philadelphia appropriated $1,500,000, and Pennsylvania $1,000,000. In 1876 Congress made a loan to the Board of $1,500,000. Thus the great problem of a financial basis for the enterprise was solved.

The first thought had been to make the exposition exclusively national, but subsequent deliberation made it seem best to widen the plan so that the arts and industries of the entire world should be represented. President Grant formally proclaimed the Exhibition in 1873, and in the following year foreign governments were invited to participate. Thirty-three cordially responded.

Meanwhile, the commission was pushing preparations. Philadelphia, the birth-place of the nation, was rightly chosen as the place for this unique memorial of that event. In the beautiful and spacious Fairmount Park, on the high bank of the Schuylkill River, an area of 285 acres was inclosed, and here five main buildings were soon rising rapidly as by magic. Besides these, there were at the time of opening, smaller structures to the number of 175, filling every available space.

On May 10th the Exposition was opened with appropriate exercises, in the presence of one hundred thousand people. Wagner had composed a Centennial March for the occasion. Whittier's Centennial Hymn was sung by a chorus of one thousand voices. The restored South chanted the praises of the Union in the words of Sidney Lanier, the Georgia poet. President Grant, in a short speech, then declared the International Exhibition open. A procession of dignitaries moved to Machinery Hall, where the President of the United States and Dom Pedro II., Emperor of Brazil, set in motion the great Corliss engine, and with the whirr of spindle and clatter of machinery the world's seventh great fair began.

Weeks and months of inspection were necessary to grasp the Exhibition as a whole and in detail, but an imaginary stroll through the grounds will give the reader some general idea of it.

Entering through one of the one hundred and six gates, the sight-seer naturally turned his eye first toward the colossal Main Building. A parallelogram in form, 1,880 feet long by 460 wide, and seventy high, it covered twenty acres. At the centre and ends were projecting wings, large buildings in themselves. In the middle and at the four corners rose towers. In spite of its size the building seemed light and almost graceful. Its brick substructure, seven feet high, stood upon massive masonry foundations. The rest of the building was mainly glass and iron. The iron trusses of the roof rested upon 672 slender iron pillars. This Hall had been erected in a year, at a cost of $1,700,000.

In the Main Building manufactures were exhibited, also products of the mine, along with various other evidences of the condition of science and education. The broad aisles ran the whole length of the interior, flanked on either side by exhibits More than one-third of the space was reserved for the United States, the rest being divided in varying proportions among foreign countries. The products of all climates, tribes, and times were here crowded together under one roof. The mighty states of Great Britain, France, and Germany exhibited the work of their myriad roaring looms side by side with the wares of the Hawaiian Islands and the little Orange Free State. Here were the furs of

Russia with other articles from the frozen North; there the flashing diamonds of Brazil and the rich shawls and waving plumes of India. At a step one passed from old Egypt to the latest-born South American republic. Chinese conservatism and Yankee enterprise confronted each other across the aisle. All civilized nations but Greece were represented — more than ever before took part in an international fair.

From the novelty of the foreign display the American visitor returned proudly to the display made by his own land. Textiles, metal work, arms and tools, musical instruments, watches, carriages, cutlery, books, and furniture—a bewildering array of all things useful and ornamental—made Americans realize as never before the wealth, intelligence, and enterprise of their native country and the proud station she had taken among the nations of earth.

Machinery Hall came next to the Main Building in size. Of plain architecture, built of wood, with iron ties, fourteen hundred and two feet by three hundred and sixty, it covered, with an annex, about thirteen acres. Here, with infinite clatter and roar, thousands of iron slaves worked their masters' will. Three-fourths of the space was taken up with American machines. Visitors from the foremost foreign nations marvelled at the ingenuity of the Yankee mind here displayed. Great Britain led the foreign nations in the size and number of articles exhibited. Canada, France, Russia, Sweden, Brazil, and other countries sent ingenious or powerful machines.

But as a Titan, towering above all these and all others, stood the great Corliss engine, built by George H. Corliss, of Providence, R. I., one of the most remarkable mechanicians and inventors of the century. A modern Samson, dumb as well as blind, its massive limbs of shining steel moved with voiceless grace and utmost apparent ease, driving the miles of shafting and the thousands of connected machines. The cylinders were forty inches in diameter; the piston stroke, ten feet. The great walking-beams, nine feet wide in the centre, weighed eleven tons each. The massive fly-wheel, thirty feet in diameter, and weighing fifty-six tons, made thirty-six revolutions a minute. The whole engine, with the strength of fourteen hundred horses, weighed seven hundred tons.

Agricultural Hall, built of wood and glass in the form of a nave with three transepts, covered ten acres. The display it contained of agricultural products and implements was the largest ever made. Here the United States stood forth far in advance of all sister nations. Specimens of the rich and deep prairie soil excited the wonder and envy of tillers of impoverished European lands. The great West, with its monster steam-ploughs and threshing machines, placed before the eye the farming methods of a race of giants. The choice and delicate fruits of sunny lands mingled with the hardy cereals of Canada and Russia.

Memorial Hall, a beautiful permanent building of granite, erected by Pennsylvania and Philadelphia at a cost of $1,500,000, was given up to art.

This was on the whole the poorest feature of the Exposition. America had few works of the first order to show. Foreign nations, with the exception of England, feared to send their choicest art products across the ocean. France, Germany, Spain, Belgium, and the Netherlands, with some other countries, were all represented. Italy, besides paintings, sent many pieces of sculpture. England contributed a noble lot of paintings, including works by Gainsborough and Reynolds. In spite of all, the collection was the largest and most notable ever seen in this country, and throngs crowded the galleries.

Horticultural Hall, built of iron and glass in the Moorish style of the twelfth century, also a permanent structure, was erected by Philadelphia. Here, one walked amid the glories of tropical vegetation. Palm, orange, lemon, camphor, and india-rubber trees rose on every hand. The cactus of the desert, rare English flowering plants, strange growths from islands of the sea, here flourished each in its peculiar soil and climate. Outside the building were beds of hardy flowering plants covering twenty-five acres. Besides these five main structures, the United States Building, where the working of the various administrative departments of the Government was shown, attracted thousands of visitors daily. A Woman's Pavilion contained products of female industry and skill. A narrow-gauge railway ran in great loops from building to building.

Twenty-six States erected buildings of their own. These served mainly as headquarters, but

two or three contained large exhibits of state products. Thirty or more buildings were put up by private enterprise to illustrate various manufacturing and industrial processes. Before the close of the Exposition more than two hundred buildings stood within the enclosure. Several foreign Governments erected small structures of various sorts.

Through the summer months, in spite of the unusual heat that season, thousands of pilgrims from all parts of the country found their way to this shrine of the world's progress. The quiet old Quaker city was moved with unwonted life. Amidst the crowds of new-comers its citizens became strangers in their own streets.

On July 4th, simple but impressive ceremonies were held in the public square at the rear of Independence Hall. On temporary platforms sat 5,000 distinguished guests, and a chorus of 1,200 singers. The square and the neighboring streets were filled with a dense throng. Richard Henry Lee, grandson of the mover of the Declaration of Independence, came to the front with the original document in his hands. At sight of that yellow and wrinkled paper, the vast audience burst forth into prolonged cheering. Mr. Lee then read the Declaration. The recitation of an ode by Bayard Taylor and the delivery of an oration by Hon. William M. Evarts were the other main features of the exercises.

Through the early fall the interest in the Exposition spread farther and farther over the land, and the attendance steadily increased. On September 28th, Pennsylvania day, 275,000 persons

passed through the gates. During October, the visitors numbered over two and a half millions. From May 10th to November 10th, the total admissions were 9,900,000; 8,000,000 admission fees were collected, amounting to $3,800,000. The fair was brought to an end on November 10th. After brief closing exercises, President Grant gave the signal to stop the Corliss engine. The giant slowly came to a standstill, the hum of the machinery died away, and the International Exhibition of 1876 was closed.

The Centennial Exposition was not a complete financial success. After returning the United States loan of $1,500,000, the stockholders could not be paid in full. The attendance was, however, larger in the aggregate than at any previous international exhibition, except that of Paris in 1867. The admissions there reached 10,200,000, but the gates were open fifty-one days longer than at Philadelphia. At Vienna, in 1873, there were but 7,255,000 admissions in 186 days against 159 days at Philadelphia.

The Chicago World's Columbian Exposition, to celebrate Columbus and the discovery of this continent, opened May 1 and closed October 31, 1893. The expenditures for it to November 12, 1893, were $28,151,168.75, and the receipts $1,114,336.08 in excess of this. The total attendance at the fair was 27,539,041 persons, half a million less than that at the Paris Exposition in 1889. The admissions to the Centennial in 1876 were only 10,164,489. But though the Columbian Fair outshone its American predecessor, it did not by any means

eclipse that. Speaking very generally, the Chicago event was but a repetition of the event at Philadelphia, only on a much vaster scale. There were, however, some noteworthy new features. The buildings were not only grander and more numerous, but in better architectural taste. A larger number of highly distinguished guests attended. The great Congresses, especially the Congress of Religions, were an adaptation from similar concourses held in connection with the Paris Exposition of 1889. These, to be sure, were no integral part of the Chicago Fair; nor were the various exhibitions of the Midway Plaisance, some of them blemishes to the Exposition rather than ornaments. The colossal Ferris wheel, costing $392,000, its top 265 feet from the ground, was another innovation.

The larger and more important results of these expositions cannot be measured with precision. A thousand silent influences were set at work upon our social, intellectual, and political life, which will operate in secret for years to come. The most obvious, and perhaps the most important, effect was the broadening of sympathies and mental outlook. Visitors to Philadelphia and Chicago got something of the benefit of foreign travel. Local prejudices were broken down. New ideas of life and civilization were planted in hitherto sterile minds. The plodding Eastern farmer caught something of the Westerner's dash and swing. North and South, East and West, drew nearer together. A narrow patriotism caught glimpses of a great and noble world without.

These influences touched the most careless observer. Special classes derived each a peculiar benefit. Mechanical invention was stimulated. Art received an impetus which can never cease to be felt. To our household art, especially, came much quickening from the sight of England's beautiful display of home decorations in 1876.

The expositions exalted the United States in the eyes of her foreign guests. Many were amazed at such proofs of the wealth, intelligence, and progressive spirit of the great republic. A correspondent of the London *Times* wrote, in 1876: "The American invents as the Greek sculptured and the Italian painted; it is genius." We may hope that the exhibitions were educators to Europe as well as to America.

Lastly, the American returned from the two great fairs with an opinion of his own country which, if more sober and just than he had previously entertained, was not less proud but far prouder. The Nation laid aside its holiday attire, and, despite manifest defects and dangers in our national life, settled down to another century of work with increased pride in its past and stronger confidence for its future.

CHAPTER VII.

ECONOMIC POLITICS

THE enormous strides with which we paid off our war debt amazed the world. The debt had reached its highest point in August, 1865. At that date the figure was $2,844,649,626, or, for the interest-bearing part alone, $2,381,530,294. The total interest-bearing debt on April 30, 1888, was only $1,038,199,762. At the end of that fiscal year, June 30, 1888, the debt, less cash in the treasury, amounted to $1,165,584,656. Its items at this time were $222,207,050 in bonds at 4½ per cent., payable in 1891; $714,315,450 in four per cent. bonds, payable in 1907; four per cent. refunding certificates amounting to $141,300; the three per cent. navy pension fund of $14,000,000, and the Pacific Railway six per cent. bonds, $64,623,512. Thus on June 30, 1888, more than half of the largest total had been paid off, and the net debt, aside from the Pacific Railway bonds, which that corporation is to pay, having fallen to below a billion. The reduction proceeded for the entire twenty-three years between the first and last dates named, at an average rate of $62,906,975 yearly, or $5,225,581 each month, $174,186 each day, $7,258 each hour, and $120.47 each minute.

The interest-bearing legal tender notes were first paid off. The greenbacks, or non-interest-bearing legal tenders are still [October 1, 1894] outstanding to the amount of $346,681,000; yet this division of the debt, too, has been vastly reduced, having stood at $433,160,569 on August 31, 1865.

To the bonded obligations of the country the policy of refunding was early applied, bonds of high rates being called in so soon as callable, and replaced by others bearing lower rates. The income of the Government was so immense that it proved unfortunate to have set so late a date as 1891 for the time at which the 4½'s could be paid off. To fix the date of maturity for the 4's in 1907 was, of course, worse still. The three per cents. of 1882, which supplanted earlier issues, were fortunately made payable at the Government's option, and on May 20, 1887, the Secretary of the Treasury issued a call for the last of them, amounting to $19,717,500, interest to cease with the first of the next July.

From this time there were no bonds subject to par payment at the discretion of the Government, and as revenues were vast the surplus began to pile up in the treasury. December 1, 1887, after every possible obligation of the Government had been provided for, $55,258,701 remained, a sum increased by the end of that fiscal year, namely, June 30, 1888, spite of considerable amounts in long bonds purchased at high rates, to $103,220,464. There was no method at once legal and economical for paying this out. The Secretary could of course

buy 4's and 4½'s in the open market, and during 1888 this was to some extent done. Obviously, if entered upon in a large way, it must have greatly carried up the price of those bonds. The question how to limit the surplus, how to keep the money of the country from becoming locked up in the treasury and sub-treasuries of the United States, was thus a grave one, and entered hotly into the political campaign of the last-named year.

On June 30, 1890, $109,015,750 in the 4½ per cent. bonds, redeemable September 1, 1891, were still outstanding. By April 1, 1891, they had, by redemption or purchase, been reduced to $53,854,250, of which one-half in value was held by national banks, to sustain their circulation. To avoid contracting this circulation the Secretary of the Treasury permitted holders of these bonds to retain them and receive interest at two per cent. About $25,364,500 was so continued. Interest on the remainder ceased at their maturity, and nearly all were soon paid off. The bonds continued at two per cent. were all along quoted at par, though payable at the will of the Government, revealing a national credit never excelled in history. The national debt, less cash in the Treasury, stood on July 1, 1894, after an increase during the previous fiscal year of $60,000,000, at $899,313,381.

The old tariff issue had emerged again soon after the end of the war. The Morrill tariff of 1861 about restored the rates of 1846, and even those rates had, on many things, been very decidedly increased during the war. Still further protective duties had been laid in the course of the war,

called compensating duties, to off-set the internal revenues which burdened manufacturers in various ways. After the war the internal taxes were nearly all swept away at the earliest possible moment, until, after July 1, 1883, only spirits, fermented liquors, tobacco, banks and bankers yielded internal revenue. Customs duties were also removed from nearly all so-called revenue articles, as spices, tea, and coffee, not produced in this country—the tax, therefore, not being of a protective nature. Slight reductions were, indeed, made in protective duties, first in 1872—replaced, however, almost entirely in 1875—and again in 1883. The act of 1883 lowered protection less than appeared, and its rates on woollens, high grade cottons, iron ore, steel, and a few other articles, were now made even higher than the same had previously borne. It will be seen that our policy during the years under survey was to limit national income sufficiently without lowering or removing any protective duties.

In the republican platform of 1888 this policy was explicitly avowed. At that time, as next to nothing could at present be done to pay off the national indebtedness, both parties had to admit that some measure was needed to lessen the revenue. The republican plan was to effect the reduction mainly by lowering or removing the remaining internal taxes, the democratic to secure the same result by changes in customs duties, cutting down rates and enlarging the free list. President Cleveland's message to Congress in December, 1887, stated the issue with great clearness,

and this issue was the main one which divided the two parties in the presidential election of the ensuing year.

Mr. Cleveland was defeated, the Republicans acquiring control of all three legislative branches of the Government. The McKinley Tariff Act was passed in 1890, considerably raising rates though somewhat enlarging the free list. It removed the duty from raw sugar, affixing a bounty to the production of sugar in the United States. But in 1892 the Democrats again acquired power, electing Mr. Cleveland and controlling the Senate. The Wilson-Senate Tariff Act was passed by them in 1894, greatly reducing rates in general, and free-listing the important commodities of wool, salt, and lumber. Raw sugar was now taxed again, and the bounty upon its production abolished. The same act containing these provisions also imposed an income tax, which, however, was very unpopular.

The revenue question in this campaign was not a little complicated by the existence of numerous and powerful Trusts, which anti-protectionists believed to be fostered by our high tariff. The Trust System arose about 1876, and in the course of a few years almost every great enterprise in the land was carried on under the form of a trust. The principal corporations or men engaged in an industry would enter into combination, more or less informal, for the regulation of production and prices. Usually the result was, in the first instance, at any rate, an elevation of prices, and where the trust constituted a necessary monopoly this rise might be indefinitely perpetuated. High

tariff as well as low tariff newspapers made great outcry against these monopolies. The latter urged that a reduced tariff, forcing these businesses more into competition with corresponding producers abroad, was the only thing needful to break their solidarity and consequent power. Advocates of high tariff denied this.

The old silver dollar, "the Dollar of the Fathers," had, until 1873, never ceased to be full legal tender, although it had since 1853 been too valuable as compared with the gold dollar to circulate much. In 1873 a law was passed silently demonetizing it, and making gold the exclusive form of United States hard money. The new German Empire did the same this very year. This was no sooner done than there began a great apparent depreciation of silver in comparison with gold at the historic ratio. This change involved no decrease in the value or purchasing power of silver even in the form of bullion, but consisted rather in a rise of the value of gold.

In view of this, as all the government bonds outstanding in 1873 had been made payable in coin, it was as good as universally believed in most sections of the Union that the demonetizing of silver, if persisted in, would work hardship to taxpayers in liquidating the national debt. A bill was therefore brought forward, and in 1878 passed, restoring to the silver dollar its full legal tender character. In this legislation, however, so great was the then disparity in value between gold and silver at the ratio of 16 to 1, Congress did not venture to give back to the white

metal the right of free coinage, but instead required the Secretary of the Treasury to purchase monthly not less than $2,000,000 worth of silver and coin it into dollars.

The act was disapproved by President Hayes, but immediately passed over his veto, February 28, 1878. The advocates of gold monometallism believed that the issue of these dollars would speedily drive gold from the country. Owing to the limitation of the new coinage no such effect was experienced, and the silver dollars, or the certificates representing them, floated at par with gold, which, indeed, far from leaving the country, was imported in vast amounts nearly every year. After 1880 the money in circulation in the United States was gold coin, silver coin, gold certificates, greenbacks or United States notes, and the notes of the national banks. The so-called Sherman Law, of 1890, added a new category, the Treasury notes issued in payment for silver bullion. It stopped the compulsory coinage of full-tender silver, though continuing and much increasing the purchase of silver bullion by the Government. The repeal of the purchase clause of this law, in 1893, put an end to the acquisition of silver by the United States.

January 1, 1879, the next year after the silver bill was passed, the United States, under the Resumption Act of January 14, 1875, began again the payment, which had been suspended ever since 1862, of specie in liquidation of greenbacks. The possibility of this had been under discussion for some years, and was disbelieved in by many

thoughtful financiers and public men. The credit of the momentous step was mostly due to John Sherman, Secretary of the Treasury in the cabinet of President Hayes. He believed resumption to be as possible as it was important. By the sale of four and one-half per cent. bonds redeemable in 1891, he had accumulated before the appointed day $138,000,000 of coin, nearly all in gold, amounting to about forty per cent. of the greenbacks then outstanding.

Resumption proved easier than even he anticipated. The greenbacks had risen to par—the first time in seventeen years — December 18th, thirteen days before the date fixed for beginning gold payments, and when the day arrived only straggling applications for coin were made, less in amount than was asked for in greenbacks as interest by bondholders, who could have demanded coin. During the entire year only $11,456,536 in greenbacks were offered for redemption, while over $250,000,000 in them were paid out in coin obligations. It was found that people preferred paper to metal money, and had no wish for gold instead of notes when assured that the exchange could be made at their option. Notwithstanding our acceptance of greenbacks for customs —$109,467,456 during 1879—the treasury at the end of that year experienced a dearth of these and a plethora of coin, having actually to force debtors to receive hard money.

Such popularity of the greenbacks stimulated to fresh life the "fiat greenback" theory, long in vogue and very influential in many parts of the country.

Its pith lay in the proposition that money requires in its material no intrinsic value, its worth and purchasing power coming entirely from the "fiat" of the government issuing it, so that paper money put forth by authority of a solvent and powerful government will be the peer of gold. This idea was the rallying point of the National Labor Greenback Party, organized at its Indianapolis convention, May 17, 1876, when Peter Cooper was put in nomination for President. At the subsequent presidential election in November, he received 82,640 votes. The next year his party polled 187,095 votes; in 1878, 1,000,365.

From the moment of its issue, there had been in the country many who went to the opposite extreme with reference to the greenback. They believed it unconstitutional and pernicious, a menace to the nation's credit and financial weal. The question came to the Supreme Court during the war, and this form of contracting debt on the part of the Government was then justified as a war measure. When the war was over the question whether the greenback's legal tender quality could still be maintained, also had to be passed upon by the court. The first decision was in the negative, but it was subsequently reversed. Still a third question was whether a man could be forced to take greenbacks in liquidation of debt after the resumption of specie payments. This was tried out in the famous case of Julliard *vs.* Greenman, and the decision was, as on the other two occasions, in favor of the greenback. In spite of all this, however, the zeal for the fiat or non-promis-

sory theory and practice of paper money almost totally died away after about 1880.

The most desperate and extensive strike that had yet occurred in this country was that of 1877, by the employees of the principal railway trunk lines, the Baltimore and Ohio, the Pennsylvania, the Erie, the New York Central, and their western prolongations. At a preconcerted time junctions and other main points were seized. Freight traffic on the roads named was entirely suspended, and the passenger and mail service greatly impeded. When new employees sought to work, militia and United States troops had to be called out to preserve order. Baltimore and Pittsburgh were each the scene of a bloody riot. At the latter place, where the mob was immense and most furious, the militia were overcome and besieged in a round-house, which it was then attempted to burn by lighting oil cars and pushing them against it. Fortunately the soldiers escaped across the river. The torch was applied freely and with dreadful effect. Machine-shops, warehouses, and 2,000 freight-cars were pillaged or burnt. The loss of property was estimated at $10,000,000. In disturbances at Chicago nineteen were killed, at Baltimore nine, at Reading thirteen, and thrice as many wounded. One hundred thousand laborers are believed to have taken part in the movement, and at one time or another 6,000 or 7,000 miles of road were in their power. The agitation began on July 14th and was serious till the 27th, but had mostly died away by the end of the month, the laborers nearly all returning to their work.

Hosts of Pennsylvania miners went out along with the railroad men. The railway strike itself was largely sympathetic, the ten per cent. reduction in wages assigned as its cause applying to comparatively few. The next decade witnessed continual troubles of this sort, though rarely if in any case so serious, between wage-workers and their employers in nearly all industries. The worst ones befell the manufacturing portions of the country. Strikes and lock-outs were part of the news almost every day. The causes were various. One lay in the vast numbers of immigrants hither and the low, ignorant character of many of them—clay for the hand of the first unscrupulous demagogue.

Another cause was the wide and sedulous inculcation in this country of the communist and anarchist doctrines long prevalent in Europe. Influences concurrent with both these were the actual injustice and the proud, overbearing manner of many employers. Capital had been mismanaged and wasted. The war had brought unearned fortunes to many, sudden wealth to a much larger number, while the unexampled prosperity of the country raised up in a perfectly normal manner a wealthy class, the like of which, in number and power, our country had never known before. As therefore immigration along with much else multiplied the poor, the eternal, angry strife of wealth with poverty, of high with low, of classes with masses, crossed over from Europe and began on our shores.

The rise of trusts and gigantic corporations was connected with this struggle. Corporations worth

nigh half a billion dollars apiece were able to buy or defy legislatures and make or break laws as they pleased; and as such corporations, instead of individuals, more and more became the employers of labor, not only did the old-time kindliness between help and hirers die out, but men the most cool and intelligent feared the new power as a menace to democracy. Strikes therefore commanded large public sympathy. Stock-watering and other vicious practices, involving the ruin of corporations themselves by the few holders of a majority of the shares, in order to re-purchase the property for next to nothing, contributed to this hostility; as did the presence in many great corporations of foreign capital and capitalists, and also the mutual favoritism of corporations, showing itself, for instance, in special freight rates to privileged concerns. Minor interests and individual employees, powerless against these Titan agencies by any of the old legal processes, resorted to counter-organization.

The Patrons of Husbandry grew up in the West, with influence longer than the Order's nominal life, of which the often unwise "Granger" railroad legislation was one sign. In the East trades-unions secured rank development, and the Knights of Labor, intended as a sort of Union of them all, attained in 1887 a membership of a million. The manufacturers' "black list," to prevent any "agitator" laborer from securing work, was answered by the "boycott," to keep the products of obnoxious establishments from finding sale. Labor-organizations, so strong, often tyrannized over their

own members, and boycotting became a nuisance that had to be abated by law.

Labor agitation had of late years become greatly easier owing to the extraordinarily increased percentage of our urban population. In 1790 only 3.3 per cent. of the people in the country lived in places of eight thousand inhabitants and upward, and so late as 1840 only 8.5 per cent. In 1850 the percentage was 12.5; in 1860, 16.1; in 1870, 20.9; in 1880, 22.5; and in 1890, 29.2. The year 1880 saw within our borders twenty cities each with a population of over 100,000; 286 each with over 8,000. In 1890 there were twenty-eight cities each having 100,000 inhabitants or more, and 448 having 8,000 or more. It is mostly manufacturing and mechanical industry which thus brings these hordes of human beings together.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE MARCH OF INDUSTRY

We can give but little idea of the advance in industrial artifice and appliances of all kinds which has been made in the United States since the Civil War. Take it first in textile manufacturing. A century ago one person in every family had to work incessantly at spinning and weaving to keep the whole of them in clothing. Now one day's work a year per person suffices for this. The speed of spindles has risen since 1860 from 5,000 to 7,500 revolutions a minute. Looms have gone from 120 picks to 160, and one hand tends from 25 to 50 per cent. more work. The "slasher" dresser accomplishes ten times more than the old machine, supplying 400 looms in place of forty, and requiring to manage it only one man and a boy instead of two men and ten girls. A generation ago one operative made three yards an hour, now he makes ten. In the last twenty years the annual production of cotton mills has risen from two and one-half to three and one-half tons per hand. One man formerly tended forty spindles, now he tends sixty. A single operative in America makes cotton cloth enough to supply 1,500 persons.

The improvements in woollen, iron, and miscellaneous manufacturing have perhaps not been quite

as great, but are remarkable notwithstanding. Power and automatic machinery are the order of the day. The Corliss engine is said to get 23 per cent. more heat and energy from a given amount of coal than had ever been obtained before it was invented. Instead of the twenty-five days which the first trans-Atlantic steamer required for the passage from America to England, many vessels now go between New York and Liverpool considerably under six days, or at an average rate of more than twenty miles an hour. The speed of passenger trains on the main railways has doubled. So has the weight of the freight-car load and the amount of freight which an engine can pull. The newest locomotives weigh nearly or quite one hundred tons each.

In 1869 a sub-marine cable was laid which joined the United States to the continent of Europe. It extended about three thousand and fifty miles, from Duxbury, Mass., to Brest, France, via the Island of St. Pierre, south of Newfoundland. The company owning the cable was chartered by the waning empire of Louis Napoleon. In 1875 a new cable was stretched between the United States and Great Britain. It was called the United States Direct Cable, and at first operated in opposition to the original one. The rates for cable messages were greatly reduced in consequence. The price, once ten dollars a word, fell in anticipation of the competition to fifty cents, and to twenty-five after the competition actually began. The two Anglo-American lines were subsequently united.

The year 1869 witnessed the junction of the Union Pacific with the Central Pacific Railway, forming a continuous railway line between the Atlantic and Pacific shores. The last rail was put down on May 12th, and on the 15th trains began to run. This work had been in process of construction ever since 1863. It traversed the Rocky Mountain range at an elevation of 8,243 feet above sea-level. The Northern Pacific Railway Company was chartered by Congress in 1864. It was not completed till August, 1883, nor opened to traffic before September. Its length from Duluth to its then terminus on the Columbia River, Washington, was 1,674 miles. The Southern Pacific and the Atlantic and Pacific, both traversing the Rockies, soon followed. Still another line, the Great Northern, connecting St. Paul with the extreme Northwest, was opened in 1893. The country's total railway mileage in 1885 was 128,967 miles; in 1893 it was 170,607 miles.

In the same years with the opening of these continental lines began the consolidation of the older ones into great systems. The New York Central had already been formed out of sixteen different fragments, but the process of consolidation in a large way may be said to have been instituted by Cornelius Vanderbilt in 1869, when he joined the Lake Shore and Michigan Southern with the New York Central, thus placing under a single administration the entire route from New York to Chicago. The first train pierced the Hoosac Tunnel, in Western Massachusetts, February 9, 1875, completing another artery between

East and West. The tunnel passes through the Hoosac Mountain, a distance of four miles and three-quarters, and had been in process of boring, though not continuously, about fifteen years.

The lighting of large spaces by electricity in a profitable manner may be dated from 1875. The possibility of producing a brilliant light with this fluid had been well known to physicists ever since Sir Humphry Davy's experiments in 1813, but no method of generating the electricity cheaply had hitherto been invented. Utilizing among others the inventions of Dr. C. W. Siemens, Mr. Charles G. Brush, of Cleveland, O., gave to the world in 1875 his remarkably efficient dynamo or generator, and from that time the illumination of streets and squares by electricity began to be somewhat common. There was, to be sure, another difficulty to be overcome, even for lighting on a grand scale, that of maintaining a steady and continuous light. In this the Jablochkoff candle, used in the Paris streets by 1878, was measurably successful. It was a voltaic arc arrangement, in which, by making each of the two carbon pencils alternately positive and negative, their ends were consumed with equal rapidity and so kept perpetually the same distance apart.

But the voltaic light was too brilliant for a small area. How to divide and subdue it so as to render it suitable for house lighting, was still a difficult problem. Farmer, Sawyer, Mann, and Edison, all attacked it at nearly the same time, going back with singular accord from the voltaic arc principle to that of incandescence in a vacuum.

Edison, the prodigy of the century in inventive genius, was the most successful. Besides improving the dynamo, he perfected with little difficulty a cheap vacuum-globe. After long experimenting he succeeded in the more arduous task of securing an automatic checking of the current before it became hot enough to consume the incandescent carbon. He also found that a large current could be divided into smaller ones by splitting up the conductor into minor filaments. Triumph in household illumination was thus achieved, and when, in October, 1878, the results of Edison's experimenting were announced to the world, gas fell from twelve to twenty per cent. The alarm was premature, however, since the new illumination has not, after all, proved so satisfactory as to displace the old. It has largely done so for streets, factories, and halls, but to no very great extent for residences.

The most stupendous engineering work yet accomplished by man, the great bridge spanning East River between Brooklyn and New York, was completed in May, 1883, excavations for its foundations having begun so early as 1870. This wonder of the world was designed by John A. Roebling, and after his death in 1869 finished by his son, W. A. Roebling. It cost about sixteen million dollars, two-thirds coming from the city of Brooklyn, one-third from New York. A gigantic stone tower, two hundred and seventy-seven feet high, was built on each side of the river. Through arched apertures in these toward the top runs the roadway, its ends being one hundred and nineteen feet above

the water. The centre of the bridge is supported by four steel wire cables, sixteen inches in diameter, which pass from solid masonry structures nearly a thousand feet away from the water's edge on either shore, up over the two towers, dipping, at the centre of the river, to nearly the level of the roadway. On account of their great weight they had to be braided, strand by strand, where they now are. Suspenders from these cables grapple the body of the bridge at frequent intervals. The main span is fifteen hundred and ninety-five and a half feet long, the entire work about six thousand feet. There are five passage-ways—two on the outside for carriages, the next two for cable cars, the middle one for foot passengers. The bridge curves upward from each tower, being at the middle one hundred and thirty-five feet above the water in summer, and three feet higher in winter, owing to contraction by the cold. All but the very largest ships sail under without shortening their masts.

In connection with the great bridge, as likewise in a way possessing an importance for the whole nation, we may mention the ingenious deepening of Hell-gate Channel, East River, by tunnelling beneath the water and using dynamite; and also the introduction of elevated railways in New York City and Brooklyn. This project had been mooted by 1868. Exactly ten years later two sections of railway were open for travel in New York. The first elevated road in Brooklyn began operation in 1885. These new avenues of travel at once became immensely popular. In 1884, no fewer

than two hundred and fifty engines and eight hundred cars were in use by the New York lines, carrying over three hundred thousand passengers daily, or about one hundred and three millions for the year. Nearly at the same time with the introduction of these roads in New York, new methods of traction for surface street railways, by electricity and by cable, were introduced in various cities of the country, bidding fair soon to do away with horses for this service.

One of the most interesting and valuable inventions of this or any century was that of the telephone, devised by Alexander Graham Bell, and first put to business use in 1877. For ten years Mr. Bell had been experimenting upon the possibility of conveying sound by means of the electric wire. In 1876 he had so far succeeded as to exhibit a pair of his instruments in successful operation at the Philadelphia Centennial Exhibition. In April of the next year the Cambridge Water Board, the Pennsylvania Railroad, and many other corporations ordered the instrument for practical service. From this time the business grew with incredible rapidity. The American Bell Telephone Company was incorporated, and in January, 1886, had in use 330,000 telephones. There were this year in various cities of the United States seven hundred and fifty-two telephone exchanges. The total length of telephone wires operated by this company was 114,371 miles. In addition to the system which centred in the Bell Company there were several competing telephone establishments in continual litigation with the Bell. The total mileage

of telephone wires in the United States in 1887 was estimated at 130,000 miles. There were the same year 170,000 miles of telegraph wire, besides private lines. In 1893, the aggregate length of telegraph lines in the United States open to the public exceeded 210,000 miles. There were, besides, government and private lines to a length vast but not ascertainable. In addition to all this, the Bell Telephone Company, which conducts the main telephone business of the country, owned, the same year, 307,748 miles of wire, which the lines of other companies increased to 440,750 miles.

From this account of our country's material advance since the war we purposely omit mention of the great economic progress at the South, as that has been already reviewed in Chapter IV. We must, instead, notice several events which decidedly checked the prosperity of these years.

So soon as gold had ceased to circulate in 1862, speculation in it began, which was one of the most pernicious results of the depreciation of paper. The ups and downs in the gold price of the greenback from week to week and from day to day during the war were largely due to this cause. In 1869 a clique of speculators in New York thought to realize an immense fortune by cornering gold, a large proportion of the stock east of the Rocky Mountains being known to be in New York City.

By Wednesday, September 22d, they had pushed up the price of gold in greenbacks from 131 to 141, causing a disastrous tumble in stocks and almost a panic. The money market grew tight, and inter-

est enormous. Loans were to be had only on the very best securities. On Thursday gold still advanced, showing that the corner remained solid. At the last call it stood at 144; at the first on Friday, September 24th, 150 was the figure. The ring was believed at this time to hold in gold and in contracts to deliver the same, over $100,000,000, while all the gold in New York outside the United States sub-treasury was hardly over $20,000,000. Only the Government could break the corner. At eleven o'clock gold was at 155, whence in half an hour it rose to 160, then to 162, then to 164. In the midst of an excitement never paralleled in the Gold Room before or since, it was announced on authority that the Government would sell. The price at once went down to 135, and the power of the clique was instantly broken. This day passed into history under the name of "Black Friday."

The Chicago fire of October, 1871, was the most disastrous yet in the chronicles of our country. It began in the evening of October 8th and raged for over twenty-four hours. According to the best estimates 250 lives were lost, 98,500 persons made homeless, 17,500 buildings consumed, and $192,000,000 worth of property destroyed. The main business portion of the city was included in the tract burned. Thirteen months later the most destructive conflagration that had ever visited Boston swept the district below Washington Street from Summer nearly to State, and eastward to the water's edge, being the most solid business portion of the city. The loss was placed at $75,000,000.

The shocking destruction of wealth by these

fires was part cause of the hard times which began in 1873. But others concurred. During 1872 the balance of trade was strongly against the United States. The circulation of depreciated paper money had brought to many an apparent prosperity which was not real, leading to the free contraction of debts by individuals, corporations, towns, cities, and states. An unprecedented mileage of railways had just been constructed. During the half decade ending with 1873, $1,700,000,000 had been thus spent in the country. The supposed wealth of many consisted in the bonds of these roads and of other newly created concerns, as mining and manufacturing corporations. Thus the entire business of the country was on a basis of inflation, and when contraction came by the resumption of specie payments and the demonetization of silver, disaster was inevitable.

In the course of the summer solid values began to be hoarded and interest rates consequently to rise. In September panic came. Credit in business was refused, debtors were pressed for payment, securities were rushed into the market and fell greatly in price, railway stocks from ten to forty per cent., even United States bonds from five to ten. There was a run upon savings banks, many of which succumbed. For ten days, beginning September 20th, the New York Stock Exchange had to suspend, so dubious was the value of most stock contracts. Manufactured products were little salable, and the prices of agricultural painfully sank. Factories began to run on short time, many closed entirely, many corporations

failed. The peculiarity of this crisis was the slowness with which it abated. No date indeed can be set as its term, its evil effects dragging on through years, so that the ill times of 1893–94 may be regarded as the same fever, intermittent in the meantime.

Notwithstanding all these drawbacks, the material progress of the United States for the two decades which we are studying was something enormous. We have no room for details. Our total population by 1880 had swollen to 50,155,783, by 1890 to 62,622,250. The census valuation of our national wealth, which had been for 1860, $16,159,616,068, was, for 1870, $30,068,518,507; for 1880, $43,642,000,000; and for 1890, $65,037,091,197. The *per capita* wealth was, according to the census of 1860, $514, by that of 1870, $780, by that of 1880, $870, by that of 1890, $1,036. In 1870 the United States was in wealth the third nation on the globe; in 1880 it had distanced France and stood second. Perhaps by to-day it is first. "The country whose population has been developed within two hundred and eighty years, does already one-third of the world's mining, one-fourth of its manufacturing, and one-fifth of its agriculture; and at least one-sixth of the world's wealth is already concentrated in the strip of territory in Central North America which is the home of the United States." These words were written after the census of 1880. Still stronger ones would be true now [1894].

CHAPTER IX.

CONCLUSION

It is a long way that we have taken the reader, from the days of Columbus to where we can espy the dawn of the twentieth century. Yet, in comparison with the times in the midst of which we write, those of three decades ago seem almost as remote as Columbus's own, so swiftly do the wheels of progress turn. Everything about us declares that we are in a new age. In addition to the signs of this which have been set down in the preceding chapters, we have only space for the bare mention of a few others.

The United States mails fly from point to point across the continent with a rapidity which would have astounded people so few years back as the close of the war. Their distribution, effected through the post-office cars that run on all the main lines, and by immediate delivery in cities and large towns, is quite as great an improvement as the speed. The postal-car system had origin in Chicago in 1864, spreading thence East and West. Speedy delivery was introduced in 1886. Postal rates are lower than ever before, and are destined soon to be lower still. Much business formerly left to the express companies is now done

by mail, and much is carried on in this way which formerly was not done at all.

There is in our country an attention to art in all its forms far beyond anything of the kind to be observed a few years ago. In all the principal cities concerts of the highest order are provided and numerously attended. Our art galleries already vie with many of those in the Old World. Students of art are found in abundance in our own multiplying schools for them, while many from this country seek art instruction in Europe. Not a few Americans are attaining eminence in this department year by year. In one artistic line we already excel every other people, viz., the application of the principles of taste in beautifying homes, churches, structures intended for business, such as exchanges, railway stations, and bridges, cars, and all kinds of machinery. We lead the world, too, in propriety and neatness of apparel, at least, for men.

Since the war the right to vote has been extended in nearly all the States, until at present manhood suffrage is practically the rule from North to South and from East to West. In this, indeed, we are only keeping pace with Great Britain, France, Italy, Switzerland, and Germany. The agitation for woman's suffrage has, however, progressed further here than in any other land. There is a large party, quasi-political, intent upon bringing it about. A national convention is held in that interest each year. In Wyoming and Utah the suffrage has already been enjoyed by women since 1869. In Kansas, by a law going into effect

February 16, 1887, they vote on all municipal affairs. In many other localities they have the privilege of voting on certain questions, as the election of school committees, and are eligible to membership in these. Occupations of honor and profit are, more and more as the years pass, open to the female sex. Women preach, practise law and medicine, and furnish many of our best bookkeepers, sales-people, and principals of schools. Vassar College, the first institution in the world for the full collegiate education of women, was opened in 1861. Smith and Wellesley Colleges, for the same, were opened in 1875, Bryn Mawr following in 1885. Cornell, Michigan, and all the State Universities in the West, like a number of the best universities in the East, educate young women on the same terms as young men. Harvard has its Radcliffe College for female pupils. At its commencement in 1886, Columbia College, of which the Barnard College for women is now virtually a part, conferred the degree of Doctor in Philosophy upon a woman. Yale University and the University of Pennsylvania open their graduate departments to women on the same terms as to men. Brown University does the same, besides providing for the undergraduate instruction of women.

Another sign of the times, still more striking, is our advance toward socialism and state socialism. This occurs for the most part in ways so recondite as to escape observation, yet in many respects the course of things in this direction is perfectly obvious. The powerful movement for the legal prohibition of the manufacture and sale of intoxicants

is one instance. The extension and perfection of our public school system, all at the expense of the tax-payers, is another, it being possible in nearly every State at present for a young person of either sex to secure, without paying a cent of tuition money, a better education than the finest universities in the land could give a hundred years ago. The extension of governmental surveillance over great industries is another illustration. The Trusts spoken of in a preceding chapter are unhesitatingly assumed to be subject to legislative investigation and command. Great corporations and combinations, it is now well understood, cannot pursue their ends merely for profit, irrespective of public interest. The Inter-State Railway Law of February 4, 1887, instituting a National Commission, to which all railways crossing state lines are responsible for obedience to certain rules which the same law enjoins, is the boldest assertion of state supervision yet made; but there is a great and growing number of thinkers who believe that mere state oversight will not suffice, and that at least gigantic businesses like telegraph, railway, and mining, must sooner or later be bought and operated out and out by public authority. Nothing has done so much to promote this conviction as the rise, procedure, and wealth of these Trusts, for from the oppressive greed of many of them no legislative regulation seems sufficient to protect the people.

This tendency to over-exalt the State's industrial function is not the only danger which confronts us. Another is that from immigration. So enor-

mous is the influx of foreigners that we are threatened with a fatal emasculation of our National character. The manner in which we have incorporated alien elements heretofore is among the wonders of history, but it is at least a question whether we can continue to do this always. It seems in part therefore a healthy sentiment which has by the law of 1882 excluded Chinese labor-immigrants. New-comers from other lands are also refused domicile here if imported under contract,* or unable to support themselves. The stronger law against the Chinese at first sight seems invidious, but there is some justification for it in the fact that those people almost never settle down permanently as citizens of the United States, but return to their native land so soon as they earn a competence. Italians of the lowest class do this to some extent, but the great bulk of our foreign-born population is here with the purpose of becoming American.

Our Irish-American fellow-citizens give concern to many. One complaint is that they have brought hither their anti-English prejudices, by the loud and continual assertion of which they tend ever to involve us with England. There is slight danger from this source, particularly since the rise of a powerful pro-Irish sentiment and party among the English themselves. Others have great fear of the Irish as Catholics, they being the chief representatives of that faith in the United States. The growth of the Roman Catholic Church in our borders of late years has cer-

* Law of February 26, 1885.

tainly been very rapid. An American clergyman, McCloskey, was made Cardinal in 1875. A National University, subject to the Catholic Church, has been erected in Washington. Catholicism in America is no longer a mission church as it has been until quite recently, but has a full National outfit as in the other great nations of the earth.

A strong movement has been developed among the Catholic clergy against our common schools as at present administered. Parochial schools have been erected in most Eastern cities and large towns, and efforts made to fill them with children who, but for their existence, would be in the public schools. The latter are denounced as godless, simply because they do not, as of course they cannot, give any positive religious instruction. This opposition is doubtless a menace to our time-honored and on the whole very efficient school system, so that what the future of this is to be no one can confidently predict. It is to be remarked, however, that some of the warmest defenders of the public schools appear in the Catholic ranks; nor is there any evidence that, as a class, American citizens of Irish birth and descent prize the free institutions of this nation a whit less than the rest of us.

A greater peril besets us in the decay which is slowly creeping over our family life. The family has in every civilized age been justly regarded as the pillar of the state. But the integrity which it possessed among our fathers, their children have invaded in many ways. Mormonism, now decad-

ent if not dead, about which so much has been said, is but one of these, and perhaps not the worst. If crimes of a violent nature are becoming less frequent, crimes against chastity are on the increase. Easy divorce is considerably responsible for this. The diversity of marriage and divorce laws in the various States is a great abomination. How to remedy it does not appear. It would be well could we have a constitutional amendment, lodging solely in Congress the power of making laws upon this vital subject.

We shall be very fortunate as a people if our material prosperity itself does not prove our curse. More than every other disaster is to be feared the growth of a temper for mere secular thinking and enjoyment, the love of lucre and of those merely material comforts and delights which lucre can buy. There is among us quite too little care for the ideal side of life. Too many who purchase books love them only for the money they cost. Rich engravings and bindings are often sought rather than edifying matter. Costly daubs are purchased at enormous prices for lack of true artistic taste or relish. In sadly frequent cases the great captain of industry is nothing but a plodder. There is too great rush for wealth. We become nervous. Nerve diseases increase alarmingly. We read, but only market reports. Think, we do not; we only reckon.

The outlook, notwithstanding, embraces much that is hopeful. Very worthful as well as very beautiful is the new sense of nationality that has been developed in this country in consequence of

the war. While men will still differ as to the original nature of our Union, while the State remains as yet a vital though a decreasingly important organ of the political frame, its real status offering to reward study as never before because no longer a sectional issue, yet the war, as unmistakably pronouncing the national will, laid the question of Nation's supremacy over State forever at rest, having hereupon virtually the effect of a constitutional amendment. Close construction will never again throttle this Union. Whether such quasi-amendment altered the Constitution, Stephens's view, or served but to bring out more clearly its old meaning, our view, practically the war entailed enormous new exaltation and centralization of the Union, with answering degradation of the State.

A quickened sense of our duty as a nation may likewise be observed at work in various directions. Our treatment of the Indians has been, since the administration of President Grant, more humane than ever before. Earnest and successful efforts have been made, very largely at the national expense, to educate them and prepare them for citizenship. They have been better protected from the rapacity of heartless agents and frontiersmen, while the Dawes Land in Severalty Bill, of 1887, and the accompanying legislation, have opened the red man's way to the actual attainment of civil rights and to all the advance in civilization of which he is capable.

The part which our Government has of late years taken in the advancement of science is greatly to

its credit. We have space to instance only the expedition of 1881–1884, headed by Lieutenant Greely, to the northern polar regions for scientific observation, reaching a point nearer to the pole than had ever before been attained. The whole world admired the daring and sympathized with the sufferings of these gallant explorers, several of whom perished of cold and hunger before relief reached them, the others rescued barely in season to save them from like fate.*

Being the most trying crisis ever successfully met by a self-governed people, the war lent powerful stimulus and tonic to the cause of free institutions everywhere, proving republican loyalty to be as firm and trustworthy as monarchical, and government by and for the governed to be not necessarily either inefficient or ephemeral. It demonstrated that a republic, without lessening its freedom, may become a great military power, generals of highest genius passively obeying a popularly elected Congress and Executive, these in turn maintaining full mastery yet not hampering military movements.

The achievement of this firmer national unity, with the success and the martial and financial prodigies attending the struggle therefor, gave us new and far higher place in the esteem of nations, with correspondingly enlarged influence in mankind's greater affairs.

* The revision of King James's version of our English Bible, New Testament finished in 1881, Old Testament in 1885, was an eminent historical event, falling in this period. American divines took prominent part in it, though of course not under any commission from our Government.

Unless we are mistaken, one may observe a more or less conscious disposition on the part of thoughtful Americans to insist that this influence be exerted, to have the nation break over the policy wisely laid down by Washington, and again in the Monroe Doctrine, for earlier times, and assert itself more in the Parliament of Man. It is felt that our place and power among the nations of the earth have not been given us for naught, and that, as the weal of mankind is to a considerable degree determined by international politics, we have no right longer to hold ourselves aloof from this field. The feeling is emphasized by the annihilation of space between us and other nations, brought about through steam navigation and ocean telegraphy.

Not only Great Britain and France, but Germany, Russia, and China are now at our very doors. They will influence our weal whether or not we react upon them. Why should we not, without being meddlesome, strive to disseminate our ideas, extend our civilization, and make our national personality felt? It was to President Arthur's praise that he caused the United States to be represented at Berlin in the Congo Conference of 1884–85. Next, our delegates will be present with voice and vote in all regular Congresses of the Great Powers. We do not prophesy, as more than one voice out of Europe itself has of late done, that the United States will some day cross the Atlantic as a conqueror. This indeed may be. The Old World reels under its crushing burden of national debts and military taxes, and in material resources can-

not long compete with us, free from such burdens. But it is to be hoped that we shall express our superiority in the form of ideas, not of arms, and use it in elevating mankind to richer culture and a nobler life.

INDEX

A

Abercrombie, General, i. 150.

Abolition, the first society formed, i. 343; sentiment growing, 365, 366; lull in spirit of, ii. 7; "immediate abolition," 12 *et seq.*; cause of spread of feeling for, 18; revival of feeling, 36.

Abolitionists, methods of, ii. 13, 14; opposition to, in the South and North, 14–16; schism in the ranks of, 16; ignored the South's dilemma, 17; their opposition to Lincoln and Congress, 192.

Acadia, named, i. 24; ceded to England, 143; expulsion of French from, 149.

Adams, Charles Francis, ii. 60; at the Geneva Tribunal, 223, 227, 228.

Adams, John Quincy, i. 306, 317; a leading whig, 331, 332; his record, 332; defends Jackson, 338, 346, 360; and the Amistad case, 367; Jackson and, 380; as an abolitionist, ii. 50; opposed to the gag policy, 51.

Adams, John, quoted, i. 163, 167; cautioned not to utter the word "independence," 173, 177, 187; signs treaty between England and America, 209, 236; a Federalist, 255; his overtures to France, 273; and the sedition law, 276, 279; attended theatres, 292; assailed, 298, 305, 326, 327, 357.

Adams, Samuel, i. 167, 168, 236.

Agriculture, in the South, ii. 250, 251.

Aix-la-Chapelle, peace of, i. 145, 146.

Alabama, and secession, ii. 86, 88.

Alabama claims, the, ii. 221–228.

Alabama, the, destructive career of, ii. 181; shattered by the Kearsarge, 182.

Alaska, the fisheries question in, ii. 242, 243; its purchase, 253; its resources, 253–255.

Albany, begun, i. 58; convention, 147, 171, 172.

Albemarle, the iron-clad, ii. 178.

Alexander, chief of the Pokanokets, i. 83.

Algiers, the Dey of, i. 312, 313.

Allefonsce, Jean, i. 25.

Allen, Ethan, at Ticonderoga and Crown Point, i. 189, 215, 216.

Ambrister, i. 338.

Amelia Island, seized, i. 337.

Amendment. See Fourteenth Amendment.

America, before Columbus. Introduction; age and origin of man in, xxxv *et seq.*; brute inhabitants of, xxx, xxxi; plants, fruits, and trees in, xxxi, xxxii; alleged discoveries of, before Columbus, i. 1; Basques, Bretons, and Normans in, 1, 2; discovered by Columbus, 8, 9; illusions of Columbus concerning, 9, 10; origin of name, 10, 11.

America, Spain gets most of, i. 13; confusion of ideas concerning, 25, 26; earliest legislative body in, 36; the first Swedish colony in, 59; origin of political institutions in, 119; the French in, 136 *et seq.*; the English in, 139 *et seq.*; treaty of France with, 206, 207; receives help from France, 206, 207; peace negotiations and treaty between England and, 208–210. See United States.

Americanism, ii. 54.

Americans, primordial, unlike Asiatics, xxv; differences between their branches, xxvi; varieties of, xxvi.

Amerigo Vespucci, his voyages and discoveries, 10, 11.

Ames, Fisher, his words on Washington, i. 222; urges ratification of Jay's treaty, 268.

Ames, Oakes, and the Credit Mobilier, ii. 215.

Amherst, General, i. 150, 151.

Amistad Case, the, i. 366, 367.

Anderson, Major Robert, at Fort Moultrie and Fort Sumter, ii. 90, 99-101; in charge of Department of Cumberland, 108, 109.

André, Major, i. 199, 215.

Andros, Sir Edmund, Governor, i. 78, 79; leaves New England, 79, 80; in New York, 104.

Annapolis Convention, the, i. 234, 235.

Annapolis founded, i. 53.

Anne, Queen, war of, i. 141-144.

Antietam, battle of, ii. 149.

Appomattox, Lee's surrender at, ii. 168, 169.

Arbuthnot, i. 338.

Argall, Captain, the voyages of, i. 57.

Arkansas and secession, ii. 89.

Arlington, Lord, i. 114.

Armed Neutrality, the, i. 207.

Army, the, discontent in, at close of the Revolution, i. 226.

Arnold, Benedict, attacks Quebec, i. 189, 190; the hero of the battle of Bemis Heights, 193, 194; turns traitor, 199.

Art, in United States, ii. 296.

Arthur, Chester A., ii. 212, 215.

Ashburton, Lord, i. 334.

Assistance, writs of, i. 162.

"Associated Youths," the, i. 274.

Atlanta, the ironclad, ii. 178.

Atlanta, taking of the city of, ii. 138, 139.

Ayllon, Vasquez de, cruise of, i. 15.

B

Bacon's Rebellion, i. 113–115.

Bainbridge, Captain, i. 313.

Baker, Colonel, killed, ii. 115.

Balboa, Vasco Nuñez de, discovers the Pacific, i. 13.

Ball's Bluff, fight at, ii. 115.

Baltimore, Lord. See Calvert, Sir George.

Baltimore, Md., population of, in 1800, i. 291; streets lighted with gas, 383; savings-banks in, 383; riot at opening of Civil War, ii. 102, 103; General Butler subdues, 106; strike at, 280.
Bank, United States, i. 262; death of the old, birth of the new, 327, 328; Andrew Jackson and the, 357, 358, 364.
Banks, General, ii. 145.
Baptists, favored by Charles II., i. 73; warring with Quakers, 78; spread of, 231; on War of 1812, 322, 323; in the fourth decade, 375.
Barbary Powers, trouble with the, i. 312-314.
Barclay, Commodore, at battle of Lake Erie, i. 320, 321.
"Barnburners," ii. 59, 60.
Barron, Commodore, i. 313; attacked at Chesapeake Bay, 316.
Bartram, the Quaker botanist, i. 130.
"Battle above the clouds," the, ii. 134.
Baume, General, i. 192.
Beauregard, General, before Sumter, ii. 99; at Manassas, and Bull Run, 109-113; at battle of Shiloh or Pittsburgh Landing, 121-123.
Bell and Everett, ii. 64, 65.
Bell, Alexander G., and the telephone, ii. 290, 291.
Bemis Heights, battles of, i. 192, 193, 194.
Bennington, defence of, i. 192.
Benton, ii. 53.
Bentonville, battle of, ii. 143.
Berkeley, Sir William, governor of Virginia, i. 37, 113; New Jersey made over to, 105, 106; and Bacon's rebellion, 114, 115; proprietary of Carolina, 117.
Berlin Decree, the, i. 316.
Bessemer steel, ii. 73; in the South, 249.
Big Bethel, fight at, ii. 107.
Billeting Act, the, i. 168.
Birney, James G., his office sacked, ii. 15; and the Liberty Party, 17.
"Blackbeard," i. 116.
"Black Friday," ii. 292.
Blaine, James G., ii. 212; his campaign for the Presidency, 217, 218.
Blair, F. P., ii. 203.
Blair, Rev. Dr., i. 115, 116.
Blockade, of the Southern ports, ii. 172; running, 172, 173; expeditions to aid, 173-175.
Bloody Brook, i. 86.
Bobadilla, supersedes Columbus, i. 9.
Booth, John Wilkes, assassinates Lincoln, ii. 169, 170; captured and killed, 170.
Boston, i. 41; feeling in, toward bishops, 126, 127; streets lighted, 135; the massacre at, 168; tea party, 169; Port Bill, 170; General Gage in, 181; evacuated by the British, 184; population of, in 1800, 291; in panic of 1837, 364; savings-banks in, 383; its clearing-house, 73; the fire at, 292.
Bowdoin, Governor, i. 232.
Braddock, Sir Edward, in French and Indian War, i. 148, 149.
Bradford, Governor, i. 40; his reply to the Dutch, 58.
Bragg, General, invades Kentucky, ii. 130; at Stone River, 130, 131; at Chickamauga and

Chattanooga, 131–136; his army broken up, 136.
Brandywine, battle of, i. 187.
Brant, Joseph, i. 287.
Breckenridge, his nomination, ii. 64, 65.
Breed's Hill, i. 182.
Brooklyn Bridge, the, ii. 288, 289.
Brooks, James, and the Credit Mobilier, ii. 215.
Brooks, Preston S., his attack on Sumner, ii. 43; challenges Wilson and Burlingame, 43, 44.
Brougham, Lord, his words on Washington, i. 222.
Brown, General, i. 318.
Brown, John, his raid, ii. 62.
Brush, Charles G., and electric lighting, ii. 287.
Buchanan, ii. 53, 80; his vacillation, 96, 97.
Buckner, General, ii. 118.
Buell, General, at battle of Pittsburg Landing, ii. 123; saves Louisville, 130, 190.
Bull Run, battle of, ii. 110–114; Gen. Sherman's words concerning, 114; loss at, 114; effect of, 115, 116; second battle of, 148.
Bunker Hill, battle of, i. 182, 183, 214.
Burgoyne, General, his advance on upper New York, i. 190; takes Ticonderoga, 191; his advance on Fort Edward, 191; his situation critical, 192, 193; retreats to Saratoga, 194; his defeat and surrender, 194, 195.
Burlingame, Anson, challenged by Brooks, ii., 43, 44.
Burns, Anthony, rendition of, ii. 37.
Burnside, General, at Knoxville, ii. 136; in command of Army of Potomac, 150; at Fredericksburg, 150, 151; resigns, 152; at Petersburg, 162, 175.
Burr, Aaron, vice-president, i. 305, 306; his rise, 308, 309; kills Hamilton, 309; his treason, 309, 310; his arrest, 310.
Burroughs, George, condemned for witchcraft, i. 100.
Butler, General B. F., at Baltimore, ii. 106; at Fortress Monroe, 107; at New Orleans, 123–125; "bottled up" at Bermuda Hundred, 160.

C

Cable, the Atlantic, ii. 71, 72; submarine from United States to Europe, 285; new cable to England, 285.
Cabot, John, discoveries of, i. 25, 26.
Cabot, Sebastian, i. 26.
Caldwell, Rev. James, i. 215.
Calhoun, John C., i. 317; his election as vice-president, 327; wishes Jackson censured, 338; 349; his record and ability, 351; his views on the tariff, 351; advocates annexation of Texas, ii. 22; his theory of popular sovereignty, 44, 46, 63, 78, 79; and the Creole case, 49.
California, exploration and seizure of, ii. 30; gold in, 31, 32; increase in population, 31; early law and government, 32; applies for statehood, 34; a state, 35, 256.
Calvert, Sir George, Lord Baltimore, plants colony at New-

foundland, i. 48; sails for Virginia, 49; Maryland is granted to, 49; his death, 49, 52; settles Maryland, 49, 50; and Clayborne, 50; compared with Roger Williams, 51; wise and conciliatory, 51; his character, 52; defied, 53; sustained by Cromwell, 54.
Calvert, Philip, made Governor of Maryland, i. 55.
Cambalu, i. 3.
Camden, battle of, i. 198, 199, 218, 219.
Canada, triple movement on, i. 150, 151; the cession of, 159, 160; hostility for, 189; the advance on, in war of 1812, 318, 319; and the fisheries question, ii. 233 *et seq.*
Canals in United States, i. 386, 387; ii. 68, 69.
Cape Ann settlement, i. 41.
Carleton, Sir Guy, i. 211, 216.
Carolina, its constitution, i. 116, 117; conflict of parties in, 117; population of, in 1700 and later, 123; the clergy in, 125. See North Carolina and South Carolina.
Carolina, fort, i. 19, 20.
Carteret, Sir George, i. 105.
Cartier, voyages and explorations of, i. 23, 24.
Carver, Governor, i. 40.
Casco, treaty of, i. 90.
Castlereagh, Lord, i. 315.
Catherine of Russia, organizing the Armed Neutrality, i. 207.
Catholics, in Maryland, i. 111; in United States, ii. 299, 300.
Cavendish, Lord, urges return of troops, i. 207.
Cavendish, Thomas, sails around the world, i. 29.
Centennial Exposition, the, origin and financial basis of, ii. 261; preparations and opening, 262; description of, 263–267; attendance at, 267, 268; not a financial success, 268.
Chambersburg burned, ii. 163.
Champlain, Lake, explored, i. 24.
Champlain, Sieur de, founds Quebec, i. 24; his Western travels, 25.
Chantilly, battle of, ii. 148.
Charitable institutions in United States, i. 373.
Charles I., indifference of, to Virginia colony, i. 37; grants charter to Massachusetts Bay Company, 41.
Charles II. and Massachusetts Colony, i. 71 *et seq.*; his views of political rights of Massachusetts Colony, 73; favors Baptists and Quakers, 73, 74; his vengeance delayed, 74; and Connecticut, 76, 77; and Rhode Island, 76, 77; and Virginia, 112, 113, 114; his words on Berkeley, 115.
Charles V. of Spain, i. 15, 16, 17.
Charleston, defence of harbor, i. 184; besieged, 197, 214; population of, in 1800, 291; taken by Sherman, ii. 142; Dupont's attack on, 178.
Charlestown, settled, i. 41.
Charter Oak, the, i. 79.
Chase, Secretary, ii. 192.
Chattanooga, movements around, ii. 131–136; lumber trade and tannery of, 249.
Cherokees, the, i. 285.
Cherry Valley, massacre at, i. 196.

Chesapeake affair, the, i. 316.
Chicago, first appearance of the word, i. 138; in 1830, 371; progress of, ii. 68; become a great money lender to the West, 255; Columbian Exposition at, 268-270; the fire at, 292.
Chickamauga, battle of, ii. 131, 132; the "Rock of," 132.
Chickasaws, the, i. 285.
Chinese labor in United States, ii. 299.
Chloroform, first used, i. 384.
Choctaws, the, i. 285.
Christmas not observed in New England, i. 294.
Church, Captain, in King Philip's War, i. 90.
Cincinnati, laid out, i. 233.
Civil Service, Andrew Jackson and the, i. 356, 357.
Civil Service Reform, ii. 213-216; Cleveland and, 218, 219.
Civil War, the, causes of, ii. 75 *et seq.;* an irrepressible conflict, 75; opening of, at Sumter, 99-101; begun, 105 *et seq.;* the three lines of campaign, 117; plan of campaign of 1864-65, 137; Virginia campaigns of 1862-63, 144 *et seq.;* close of, at Appomattox, 168, 169; military service in, and number of killed and wounded, 170; naval operations of, 171-182; expenses of, 186, 187; measures to pay off debt of, 187-189.
Clark, John, of Newport, i. 78.
Clay, Henry, i. 306, 317, 326, 327; the most interesting figure of the Whig Party, 333-335; his record, 333; his power as an orator, 333, 334; his duel with Randolph, 334; his wit, 334; a pleader for the Missouri compromise, 346; forces the bank question forward, 358; opposes annexation of Texas, ii. 22; his omnibus bill, 34, 35, 49; and the Creole case, 49, 53.
Clayborne, and Lord Baltimore, i. 50; his insurrection, 52, 53.
Clergy, the, in the Colonies, i. 125, 126.
Cleveland, Grover, elected President, ii. 217, 218; and the Civil Service, 218, 219; on the tariff, 274, 275; defeated, 275.
Clinton, General, i. 190, 193; sends out plundering parties, 196; at Charleston, 197; returns to New York, 198; his severity, 197; deceived by Washington, 203.
Coal, anthracite, discovered, i. 293.
Coinage, i. 295-297; Andrew Jackson and, 360-362; ii. 276-279.
Cold Harbor, the fight at, ii. 160, 161.
Colfax, Schuyler, ii. 203.
Coligny, Admiral, i. 19, 20.
Colleges, founded in America, in colonial times, i. 127; social differences in, 133, 134; commencements, 294.
Colonies, the governmental institutions in, i. 119-122; the relation of, to England, 120-122; classification of, 120; constitutional and governmental changes in the, 120; rights claimed by, 121; attitude of, toward taxation, 121, 122, 163-170; population of, at different dates, 123, 124; differences in, according to sections, 124; intellectual ability in, 124, 130;

English Church in the, 125; the clergy in the, 125, 126; opposition to episcopacy in, 126, 127; colleges and schools in, 127, 128; newspapers in, 128, 129, 158; libraries in, 129; postal service in, 129, 158; learned professions in, 129; epidemics in, 130; scholars and artists in, 130; travelling in, 130, 131, 158; manufactures and commerce in, 131; houses in, 131; food and clothing in, 131, 133; social differences in, 133, 134; redemptioners in, 134; penal legislation in, 134; French and Indian War a military training for, 155, 156; union of, 157; George III. and, 161 *et seq.*; England ignorant of, 162; effect of the Stamp Act on, 164; desire for independence in, 171-174; effect of Declaration of Independence on, 178-180.

Colonization Society, American, ii. 8.

Colorado, made a state, ii. 253; mineral discoveries in, 255.

Columbian Exposition, the World's Fair, ii. 268-270.

Columbus, Christopher, influence of reading of travels, on, i. 4; his birth, early life, and marriage, 4; his studies, 4, 5; his theory of reaching Asia by sailing west, 5, 6; his appeals for aid, 6, 7; lays his project before Ferdinand and Isabella, 6, 7; his contract with Isabella, 7; sails from Palos, 8; his voyage, 8; discovers America, 8, 9; his later voyages and discoveries, 9; superseded by Boabdilla, 9; his illusions concerning America, 9, 10; his death, 10.

Comer, Rev. John, i. 96.

Commission, of 1664, i. 74.

Crompton's mule jenny, i. 301

Concord, fight at, i. 181; Emerson's lines on, 181.

Cone, Dr. Spencer H., ii. 17.

Confederacy, its government organized, ii. 89, 91, 92; its constitution, 93; its prospects, 93, 94; collapse of, 158 *et seq.*; naval operations of the, 175 *et seq.*; England sides with, 183; Napoleon III. aids, 185; finances of, 189, 190.

Confederation, the Articles of, i. 223 *et seq.*; bound the States together, 223; faults of, 224, 225, 228, 230; advantages of, 225, 226, 228, 229; propositions to reform the, 232; no fundamental law, 248.

Congregationalists, nearly all Federalists, i. 322.

Congress, the first Continental, i. 170; petition by, sent to England, 174; adjourns to Baltimore, 186; gives thanks for close of Revolutionary war, 204; the revolutionary, 223; its powers, 224, 225; thoroughness of first constitutional, 250, 253; personnel of, 253; censures Andrew Jackson, 358, 359; an extra session of, in panic of 1837, 364, 365; treatment of anti-slavery petitions by, ii. 50-53; inaction of, toward the South, 97; and President Johnson, 198-202; takes measures to protect the negroes, 204.

Congress, the, burned, ii. 176.

Connecticut, settlement of, i. 45; population of towns of, in 1643, 45; and Charles II., 76,

77; liberal charter of, 76; prosperity of, 76; its boundary disputes, 77; in fear of Dutch attacks, 77; and Andros, 79; valley of, invaded during King Philip's War, 85, 86, 89; population of, in 1754, 123; ratifies the Constitution, 239; corporation laws, 383.
Constitution, the, James Madison the father of, i. 233; rise of the new, 232 *et seq.*; signed, 235; completion and ratification of, 238-240; launching the, 243; benefits from, 248, 249; popularity of, 250; Federalists and anti-Federalists on interpretation of, 256, 257; XIIth Amendment to, 306; broad construction of, 327; ambiguity of, on slavery, ii. 19; precludes possibility of secession, 79.
Constitutional Union party, ii. 64.
Constructionists, close and liberal, i. 256.
Continental Congress. See Congress.
"Contraband of War," ii. 190.
Contrecœur, at Great Meadows, i. 147.
Cooper, Peter, ii. 71; and the greenback party, 279.
Copley, Sir Lionel, Governor of Maryland, i. 112.
Copperheads, denounce the war as cruel and needless, ii. 193.
Corinth, battle of, ii. 125.
Corliss engine, the, ii. 265.
Cornell, Ezra, and telegraphy, ii. 69, 70.
Cornwallis, General, follows Washington across New Jersey, i. 185, 186; at the battle of Camden, 198; his triumphal march north, 200; at Guilford Court-house, 201, 202; retreats to Virginia, 202; at Yorktown, 203; his surrender, 203, 204.
Corporation laws, in the fourth decade, i. 383.
Correo, i. 5.
Cortez, Hernando, conquers Mexico, i. 14, 15.
Costume, in United States in the fourth decade, i. 381.
Cotton, tariff on, i. 348; slavery and, ii. 3, 4; crops after the war, 248.
Crandall, Miss Prudence, her school destroyed, ii. 15.
"Credit Mobilier," the, ii. 215.
Creeks, the, i. 285; Andrew Jackson conquers, 319.
Creole case, the, ii. 49.
Crittenden, ii. 53, his compromise, 97, 98.
Cromwell, requires submission of Virginia colony, i. 38, 53, 54.
Crown Point taken, i. 189.
Cuba, efforts of Lopez to conquer, ii. 57; United States and, 58.
Culpeper, Lord, i. 114.
Cumberland, the army of, ii. 137.
Cumberland, the, sunk by the Merrimac, ii. 175, 176.
Curtis, G. W., ii. 217.
Cushing, Caleb, ii. 223, 224.
Cushing, Lieutenant, blows up the Albemarle, ii. 178, 179.

D

Dale, Commodore, expedition of, i. 313.
Dale, Governor of Virginia, i. 34.

Dare, the name of the first child of English parents born in America, i. 30.
Dartmouth College, decision of the U. S. Supreme Court, i. 383.
Davies, Rev. Samuel, his words concerning Washington, i. 149.
Davis, Jefferson, in Mexican war, ii. 25; chosen President of the Confederacy, 92; his career and powers, 92, 93; sends cannon to St. Louis, boxed up, 107; and his government leave Richmond, 167; his capture, 170.
Debt, the Federal, at close of the Revolution, i. 259; the foreign debt, 260; domestic debt, 260; State debt, 260; scheme for payment, 261; reduction of National, ii. 271, 272, 273.
Decatur, i. 313.
Declaration of Independence, mooted, i. 176, 177; drafted, passed, and signed, 177; the language and spirit of, 177, 178; its effect, 178–180.
"Declaratory Act," the, i. 167.
Deerfield, Mass., attack on, i. 142.
De Kalb, General, i. 198; the hero of Camden, 198, 199, 218, 219.
Delaware, Lord, Governor of Virginia, i. 34; his mild sway, 35.
Delaware, settlement begun, i. 58; intimately related to Pennsylvania, 109; its legislature, 109; population in 1700 and later, 123; ratifies the constitution, 239; and secession, ii. 89.
Delfosse, Maurice, ii. 234.
Democratic Party, the origin of, i. 254; enters a long lease of power, 306; its policy, 307; and the tariff, 349; in 1840, 363; favored annexation of Texas, ii. 21; and Whiggism, 48; revolt from, at the North, 55, 56; disagreements in, 59, 60, 62, 63, 64; wished to compromise with the South, 95; opposition of, to the administration on slavery question, 192, 193; views of, on effect of secession, 195; recovery of power by, 216, 217; tariff policy of, 274.
Demont, Adjutant, treason of, i. 185.
Dickinson, John, of Pennsylvania, i. 174, 177.
Dighton Rock, the writing on, i. 2.
"Dollar of the Fathers," the, ii. 276.
Donelson, Fort, capture of, ii. 118–120.
Douglas, Judge, and the Missouri Compromise, ii. 38, 39; his "squatter sovereignty," 40; his theory, 44, 63; how far he was right, 47; his nomination, 64; his voice for war, 102.
Drake, Sir Francis, sails around world, i. 28, 29; takes Virginia settlers back to England, 30.
Duluth, Ia., ii. 259.
Du Lhut, explorations of, i. 137.
Dupont, Flag-Officer, ii. 173; tries to seize Charleston, 178.
Du Quesne, Fort, i. 147, 148, 150.
Dustin, Hannah, i. 141.
Dutch, the, honesty of, i. 58; their relations with the Ply-

mouth colonists, 58; conquest of, by the English, 61; persistence of influence and traits of, 61; war of, with Indians, 66–70; treaty of, with Indians, 70; Connecticut in fear of, 77; conquest of, by the English in New Netherland, 103.
Dutch West India Company, the, i. 57.
Dwight, Timothy, his sermon to Gates's soldiers, i. 194; quoted, 322.

E

Early, General, his advance against Washington, ii. 163; burns Chambersburg, 163; defeated at Opequon Creek, 164; completely routed, 165.
Eaton, Major, and his wife, i. 379, 380.
Edison, Thomas A., and electric lighting, ii. 287, 288.
Edwards, Jonathan, i. 130.
Electoral Commission of 1877, the, ii. 209–211.
Electoral Count Act, the, ii. 211.
Electric lighting, ii. 287, 288.
Elevated railroads, ii. 289, 290.
Elizabeth, Queen, names Virginia, i. 30.
Ellsworth, Colonel, killed, ii. 106.
Ellsworth, Oliver, i. 252, 253.
Emancipation, laws to hinder, ii. 10; Proclamation, 50; growth of feeling for, 190, 191; universal, 191, 192.
Emerson, R. W., quoted, i. 181.
England made little effort to explore New World, i. 26; relations of American colonies to, 120–122; conquest of New Netherland by, 103; in the heart of America, 139; in King William's War, 140; English population in America, 140; causes of colonial strength of, 140; her plans in French and Indian War, 147, 148; her wars a heavy drain, 155; tries to force navigation laws, 162; her ignorance of the American colonies, 162; her attitude toward taxation of the colonies, 165; her difficulties at close of the Revolution, 206, 207; involved in four wars, 207; peace negotiations and treaty between America and, 208–210; clung to Western Posts after the Revolution, 230, 266; determined to monopolize America's foreign trade, 259; Federalist leaning toward, 265; impresses seamen, 266, 267, 315; seizes French goods in American vessels, 266; her attitude toward United States, 267; tried to prevent knowledge of new machinery reaching America, 302; ignores international law, 315; she questions the neutrality of the United States, 317; and the Oregon Question, ii. 28, 29; attitude of, in the Civil War, 183, 184, 185; and the Alabama claims, 221–228; and the Fisheries Dispute, 229–243.
English, the. See England.
English Church, agitation in Maryland in favor of, i. 111; in the colonies, 125.
English, William H., ii. 212.
Epidemics, in colonial America, i. 130.
Ericson, Lief, his sail to America, i. 1.

Ericson, Thorwald, i. 1.
Erie, battle of Lake, i. 320, 321.
Erskine, Lord, his words on Washington, i. 222.
Eskimos, traditions among, concerning Frobisher's visits, i. 28.
Ether, ii. 72.
Eutaw Springs, battle of, i. 202, 203.
"Evangeline," history, i. 149.
Evans, Oliver, i. 293, 302.
Evarts, William M., ii. 201, 224; delivers oration at Centennial celebration, 267.
Everett, Edward, ii. 49; his nomination, 64.
Excise, the, in Washington's administration, i. 261, 262.

F

Factory, the first, i. 384.
Factory system, beginning of, in United States, i. 302, 303.
Fair Oaks, battle of, ii. 145.
Farragut, Commodore, at New Orleans, ii. 123–125; at Mobile Harbor, 179, 180.
Federal Convention of 1787, the, i. 235, 236; personnel of the, 236, 238.
Federalism and anti-Federalism, i. 254 *et seq.*; policy of, 254, 255; origin and development of the terms, 254; Federalists, aristocratic, 255; two kinds of Federalists, 255; policy of anti-Federalists, 255, 256; Federalist and anti-Federalist arguments on Article I. section VIII. of Constitution, 257; Federalist leaning toward England, 265; Federalistic and anti-Federalistic feeling toward the French Revolution, 269; Federalists in the ascendant in the VI^th^ Congress, 273; Federalist excesses and sedition, 275, 276; results of the Federalist policy, 276; animus of Federalists, 277; unpopularity of Federalism, 278, 279; Federalist discussions, 279; Federalist opposition to the administration, 280; Federalist strength waning, 280; its after influence, 280, 281; opposition of Federalists to war of 1812, 321, 322.
Federalist and anti-Federalist. See Federalism.
Federalist, the, i. 239.
Fendall, Governor of Maryland, his rebellion, i. 54, 55.
Ferdinand VII. of Spain, i. 339.
Ferdinand and Isabella, Columbus appeals to, i. 6, 7.
Field, Cyrus W., and the Atlantic cable, ii. 71, 72.
Fillmore, Millard, i. 377; ii. 34, 58.
Financial crisis of 1857, ii. 73, 74.
Finnborge, i. 2.
Fish, Hamilton, ii. 221.
Fisher, Fort, taken, ii. 180.
Fisheries dispute, the, ii. 229–243; clause relating to, in treaty of 1783, 229; effects of war of 1812 on, 230, 231; treaty of 1818 provisions, 231, 232; reciprocity in, 232–234; effect on, of Canadian act of Confederation, 233; effect of treaty of Washington on, 233, 234; severe measures of Canada in, 234–236; Mr. Phelps's words on, 237, 238; Mr. Bayard and, 237–

239; the commission and treaty, 240-242; in Alaska, 242.
Fitch, John, i. 203.
Five Forks, battle of, ii. 166, 167.
Fletcher, governor of Pennsylvania, i. 108.
Florida, Ponce de Leon lands on coast of, i. 14; Narvaez's expedition into, 17, 18; French settlement in, 19; hostilities between France and Spain in, 20, 21; her disputed boundary, 336, 337; West Florida occupied, 337; East Florida seized, 337, 338; sold by Spain, 339; its attitude on secession, ii. 86-88; improvement in, of late years, 250, 251.
Floyd, J. B., treason of, ii. 90, 91, 98, 99; at Fort Donelson, 118, 120.
Foote, Commodore, at Forts Henry and Donelson, ii. 117, 118, 120.
Forbes, General, i. 150, 151.
Force Act, the, of 1871, ii. 204.
Fourteenth Amendment, the, ii. 200.
Fox, George, and Roger Williams, i. 78.
France, hostilities in Florida between Spain and, i. 20, 21; Nova Scotia assigned to, 81; in the heart of America, 136 *et seq.*; takes possession of Texas, 139; advantages of, in King William's War, 139, 140; French population in America, 140; vigilance and aggression of, in America, 145; expulsion of the French from Acadia, 149; surrenders American territory to England, 152; treaty of, with America, 206, 207; lends aid to America, 206, 207; Revolution in, 263; arguments for United States aiding, 264, 265; justification of Washington's policy toward, 270; violates the treaty, 270; reciprocates in grievances, 270; effect of Jay's treaty on, 272; further overtures to, 273; and Florida, 336, 339; spoliation claims against, 359, 360.
Franklin, Benjamin, i. 116; 130; his plan for general government over English America, 147, 172; his words concerning the Earl of Loudon, 149; his words at the signing of the Declaration of Independence, 177; his popularity and influence in France, 208, 209; conducts peace negotiations, 208, 209; a master in diplomacy, 219, 220, 236.
Fraser, General, i. 192, 193.
Fredericksburg, the attack at, ii. 150-152.
"Free Soilers," ii. 59, 60.
Fremont, John C., in California, ii. 30; 67; 84, 85; head of the Western Department, 108; his difficulties, 108; 190.
French. See France.
French and Indian War, the, i. 146-153; England's plans in, 147, 148; Braddock in, 148, 149; results of, 154 *et seq.*; a military training for the colonies. 155, 156; produced union of the colonies, 157, 158; removed a dangerous neighbor to the colonies, 158, 159.
French Revolution, the, i. 263, 269.
Frobisher, Martin, tries for a northwest passage, i. 26, 27;

his second expedition, 27; third expedition, 27; tradition concerning visits of, among the Eskimos, 28.
Frontenac, Count, i. 137, 138; in King William's War, 141.
Fugitive Slave Law, ii. 8, 9; the new, 35-37, 80.
Fuller, Dr. Richard, ii. 17.
Fulton and the steamboat, i. 294.

G

Gag law, ii. 50-52.
Gage, General, in Boston, i. 181; evacuates Boston, 184.
Gaines, General, in Florida, i. 337.
Gaines's Mill, battle of, ii. 145, 146.
"Gallomaniacs," i. 274.
Garfield, James A., elected President, ii. 212; assassinated, 212, 213.
Garrison, and the *Liberator*, ii. 12; his position supported by many able men, 13; his words on anti-abolition feeling in the North, 14; very radical, 16, 18.
Gaspé affair, the, i. 175.
Gates, General, succeeds Schuyler, i. 192; at battles of Stillwater, 193, 194; at battle of Camden, 198, 199, 218, 219; removed, 200.
Genet, his high-handed action, i. 271; his insolence and final removal, 272, 273.
Geneva Tribunal, the, ii. 223-226.
George, King, war of, i. 144, 145.
George III. and the American colonies, i. 161 *et seq.*; his character and policy, 161, 166; and the tea shipments, 169; resolves upon coercion, 169; denounces Americans as rebels, 174; preparing to place mercenaries in arms against America, 174, 175; his resolution not to yield to America, 207.
Georgia, Colony of, i. 118; ratifies the Constitution, 259; its attitude on secession, ii. 86, 88, 89; attitude of, at close of the war, 199.
Germain, Lord, his criminal negligence, i. 205.
Germantown, battle of, i. 187.
Gettysburg, battle of, ii. 154-157; losses at, 157.
Ghent, the Treaty of, i. 323, 324.
Giddings, Resolutions, ii. 49.
Gilbert, Sir Humphrey, visits America, i. 29.
Gist, Governor, of South Carolina, ii. 85, 86.
Gladstone, W. E., his words on Washington, i. 222.
Gold, search for, in America, i. 27; coinage, 360-362; ii. 276-279; discovered in California, ii. 31; excitement, 31; yield, 31, 32; speculation in, 291, 292.
Goodyear vulcanizes rubber, ii. 72.
Gourgues, Dominic de, i. 20.
Grant, U. S., at the taking of Mexico, ii. 27; occupies Paducah, 108; his capture of Forts Henry and Donelson, 117-120; at Corinth and Shiloh, 121-123, 125; his plan of attacking Vicksburg, 125-126; his movements against Vicksburg, 126-128; his movements about Chattanooga, 133-136; made Lieutenant-General, 136, 137, 158; comes East, 158;

in the Wilderness, 158, 159; his "movements by the left flank," 159; at Spottsylvania, 159, 160; at the North Anna, 160; at Cold Harbor, 160; change of base to the James, 161; at Petersburg, 161-163, 165-167; reinforces Washington, 163; forces Lee to surrender, 168, 169; his personal appearance, 168; his terms of surrender, 169; elected President, 203; his work in reconstruction, 203, 204; re-elected, 205, 206; candidate for third term nomination, 212; opens Centennial Exposition, 262.
Great Meadows, fights at, i. 147, 148.
Greeley, Horace, his campaign for President, ii. 205, 206; his death, 206.
Greely, Gen. A. W., expeditions of, to the north, ii. 303.
Greenbacks, the "fiat greenback" theory, ii. 278, 279; the party, 279.
Greene, General Nathaniel, his character and record, i. 200, 216, 217; his plan of campaign, 201; at Guilford Court House, 201, 202; at Hobkirk's Hill, 202; drove the British from Georgia and Carolinas, 203.
Greene, Governor, successor to Lord Baltimore, i. 52.
Grenville, Sir Richard, visits Virginia, i. 30.
Grievances, statement of, i. 169.
Grijalva, Juan de, explorations of, i. 14.
Groseilliers, explorations of, i. 136.
Guadalupe Hidalgo, the treaty of, ii. 27, 28.
Guerilla warfare, i. 202.
Guérin, i. 136.
Guilford Court House, battle of, 201, 202.
Guiteau, Charles J., assassinates President Garfield, ii. 212, 213.
Gustavus Adolphus, his ideas of colonizing America, i. 59.
Gutta percha, ii. 72, 73.

H

Hadley, fight at, in King Philip's War, i. 85, 86.
Hale, Nathan, story of, i. 214, 215.
Hall, Captain, voyage of, i. 28.
Halleck, General, ii. 108; 120; 121; at Corinth, 125; becomes General-in-Chief, 125; 190.
Haller, Major, his fight with Indians, ii. 67.
Hall's Island, i. 27.
Hamilton, Alexander, i. 232, 239; first Secretary of the Treasury, 251; a Federalist, 255; on the Federal debts, 260; on the United States Bank, 262; 279; 280; assailed, 298–300; lines on, 300; 305; shot by Aaron Burr, 309.
Hamlin, Hannibal, his nomination, ii. 64.
Hancock, General, ii. 151; at Gettysburg, 154, 157; a Presidential candidate, 212.
Hardee, General, at Savannah, ii. 141.
Hargreave's spinning machine, i. 301.
Harmar, i. 285.
Harrison, Colonel Benjamin, of Virginia, i. 174.

Harrison, William Henry, Governor of Indiana, i. 289; on intemperance, 295; in war of 1812, 318, 319; elected President, 368, 369; his death, 369.
Hartford, settled, i. 44, 45; Dutch fort at, 58; population in 1827, 372; convention, ii. 84.
Harvey, Governor of Virginia, i. 37.
Hawley, General J. R., President of Centennial Commission, ii. 261.
Hayes, R. B., his Presidential campaign, ii. 208–211; inaugurated, 211; withdraws troops from South Carolina and Louisiana, 212.
Helge, i. 2.
Hell-gate, deepening of channel, ii. 289.
Hendricks, Thomas A., ii. 208, 217.
Henry VII., of England, i. 26.
Henry VIII., of England, i. 26.
Henry, Fort, surrendered to Grant, ii. 117, 118.
Henry, Patrick, i. 236.
Henry, Prince, of Portugal, his patronage of all schemes of exploration, i. 4.
Henry, William, i. 293.
Herkimer, General, i. 191.
Herschel, Sir John, and the moon hoax, i. 377, 378.
Hoar, Senator, ii. 219.
Holy Alliance, the, i. 339.
Homœopathy, in United States, i. 384.
Hood, General, at Atlanta, ii. 138, 139; his army routed, 141, 142.
Hooker, General Joe, at Lookout Mountain, ii. 134, 135; at Atlanta, 138; at South Mountain, 148, 149; at Antietam, 149; at Fredericksburg, 151; in command of Army of the Potomac, 152; at Chancellorsville, 152, 153; resigns, 154; 190.
Howard, Lord, i. 115.
Howe, Elias, patents sewing-machines, ii. 72.
Howe, General, I., 185; advances on Philadelphia, 187.
Hudson, Henry, the explorations of, i. 56, 57.
Hudson River, explored, i. 56; the Dutch trade on, 57.
Huguenots, i. 111; in Carolina, 117, 141.
Hulls, Jonathan, i. 293.
"Hunkers," ii. 59.
Hunter, General, ii. 108; 190.
Hutchinson, Mrs. Anne, settles in Rhode Island, i. 44; killed by the Indians, 68.

I

Idaho made a State, ii. 253.
Immigration, restriction of, ii. 298, 299.
Independence, slow growth of desire for, i. 171–174; John Adams cautioned not to utter the word, 173; Washington's words concerning, 173; Richard Henry Lee moves resolution for, 176; Declaration of. See Declaration of Independence.
"Independents," the, i. 39.
Indiana, the territory formed, i. 289.
Indians, American, misnamed by Columbus, xxix; characteristics of, xxix; groupings of

xxix, xxx; agricultural prosperity of, xxxii; hostilities of, in Virginia, i. 35; invade New Amsterdam, 67; hostilities of Pequots, 62–65; Dutch war with, 66–70; kill Mrs. Hutchinson, 68; restore granddaughter of Mrs. Hutchinson to the whites, 70; treaty of, with the Dutch, 70; treatment of, by the whites, 82; their distrust and hatred of whites, 83; the Pokanokets, 83; the Nipmucks, 85; the Narragansetts in King Philip's war, 86, 87; their habits, 88; overcome by Captain Turner, 89, 90; the Mohawks and the French and English, 139; price offered for scalps of, in Massachusetts, 142; in King George's war, 146; left alone to finish French and Indian war, 152; outbreaks in the West, 285 *et seq.*; St. Clair's expedition against, 285–287; Wayne's victory over, 288; in Seminole war, 366; hostilities in the West, ii. 67; Major Haller's fight with, 67.

Industries in the United States, i. 300, 301; advance in, by 1840, 382 *et seq.*

Insurance, marine and fire, begun in America, i. 131.

Intemperance, common in United States, i. 295.

Internal improvements, Whig policy concerning, i. 330, 331.

Inventions, in United States, 301, 302.

Iowa, population of, in 1830, i. 371.

Iron Law of 1867, the, ii. 200.

Iron tariff, i. 348.

Isabella, of Spain; i. 6, makes contract with Columbus, 7.

Island No. 10, capture of, ii. 120, 121.

J

Jackson, Andrew, his wounds, i. 197; 306; conquers the Creeks, 319; at battle of New Orleans, 319, 320; his quarrel with Adams and Clay, 326, 327; seizes East Florida, 337, 338; hangs Ambrister and Arbuthnot, 338; Quincy Adams's defence of, 338, 349; and the nullification ordinance, 352, 353; his life, 355; his popularity, 355, 356; his mistaken ideas, 356; and the civil service, 356, 357; as a party organizer, 357; and the United States Bank, 357, 358; Congress censures, 358, 359; his revival of West Indian trade, 359; and French spoliation claims, 359, 360, 380; and the coinage, 360–362; made many enemies, 363; results of his policy, 364; his influence for Van Buren, 368; and Mrs. Eaton, 379; and Quincy Adams, 380.

Jackson, Fort, ii. 123, 124.

Jackson, General Stonewall, ii. 145; at second battle of Bull Run, 148; at Chancellorsville, 152, 153; killed, 153.

Jackson, Governor, of Missouri, ii. 107, 108.

James I., issues first English colonial charter, i. 31; appoints commission to inquire into Virginia Company, 36, 37.

James II., becomes king, i. 78;

makes Andros governor, 78, 79; New York named after, 103; Penn and, 107; not popular in Maryland, 111; Virginia and, 115.
James, Postmaster, ii. 214.
Jamestown, settled, i. 31; colony of, 32; abandoned by the colony, 34.
Jay, John, his share in peace negotiations, i. 209; 236; 239; first chief justice, 252; a Federalist, 255; sent to England as envoy extraordinary, 267; his treaty, 267, 272, ii. 3; burned in effigy, 267; 305.
Jefferson, Thomas, writes Declaration of Independence, i. 177; first Secretary of State, 251; an anti-Federalist, 255, 256; opposes United States bank, 262; his criticism of Washington's proclamation of neutrality, 264; 279; fond of menageries and circuses, 292; assailed, 298, 299; elected president, 305, 306; the typical Democrat, 307; his character, 308; his civil service policy, 308; and the Barbary powers, 311-313; his words concerning Missouri, 341; for emancipation, 343; 346; 357.
John II., king of Portugal, i. 6.
Johnson, Andrew, his policy of reconstruction, ii. 197, 198; his work ripped up by Congress, 198, 199; attempt to impeach, 201, 202.
Johnson, Reverdy, ii. 221.
Johnston, General A. S., killed, ii. 122.
Johnston, General Joseph E., at Bull Run, ii. 110-113; at Vicksburg, 127, 128; his opposition to Sherman's march to the sea, 137, 138; routed by Sherman at Bentonville, 142, 143; wounded, 145; his surrender, 170.
Joliet, Louis, explorations of, i. 137.
Jones, Paul, his naval victory, i. 196, 215.
Judiciary, the, of the United States, i. 252, 253.
Julliard versus Greenman, the case of, ii. 279.

K

Kansas, anti-slavery emigration to, ii. 40; political jobbery in, 41; endeavors to secure admission to the Union, 41-43; riots, 42; becomes a state, 43, 253.
Kansas-Nebraska Bill, the, ii. 39, 40.
Karlsefne, Thorfinn, i. 1.
Kearney, Colonel Philip, campaign of, ii. 30.
Kearsarge, the, and the Alabama, ii. 182.
Keith, George, his teachings against slavery, i. 108.
Kellogg, Governor, his government sustained in Louisiana, ii. 206-208.
Kendall, Amos, and telegraphy, ii. 69, 70.
Kentucky, resolutions on the sedition acts, i. 277, 278; becomes a state, 282; and secession, ii. 89; the contest in, 108, 109; confederate posts in, 117; clear of confederates, 120; Bragg invades, 130.
Khan, Kublai, winter residence of, i. 3.

Kieft, Governor, his administration, i. 60; angers the Indians, 67; attacks Indians, 67; removed, 69.
King, Rufus, i. 237.
King's Mountain, victory at, i. 200.
Knights of the Golden Circle, the, ii. 88, 89.
Know Nothings, the, ii. 54, 55, 61, 64.
Knox, first secretary of war, i. 251, 262.
Ku Klux, the, ii. 203, 204, 245.

L

Labor agitations, ii. 280–283; organizations, 282.
Lafayette, General, at Yorktown, i. 203; meditated settling in America, 299.
Lancaster, Mass., sacked and burned, i. 87.
Land, early system, i. 284; system of marketing, 289; Whig policy concerning, 329.
Lanier, Sidney, ii. 262.
La Salle, explorations of, i. 136–138; killed, 138.
Las Casas, i. 21, 22.
Lecompton Constitution, the, ii. 42, 43.
Lee, General Robert E., and McClellan in Virginia, ii. 109; in command of Army of Virginia, 145; in the "Seven Days Fight," 145–147; goes north to meet Pope, 147, 148; invades Maryland, 148, 149; pushes into Pennsylvania, 148; slips away from McClellan, 150; at Fredericksburg, 150, 151; at Chancellorsville, 152, 153; in Pennsylvania, 154; at Gettysburg, 154–157, in the Wilderness, 158, 159; at Spottsylvania, 159, 160; at Cold Harbor, 160; holds Richmond and Petersburg, 161; sends Early to make a demonstration against Washington, 163; his army crumbling away, 166; his problem, 166; at Five Forks, 166; his retreat from Richmond, 167, 168; his surrender, 168, 169; his personal appearance, 168; his army at close of the war, 169.
Lee, Richard Henry, of Virginia, moves resolution for independence, i. 176.
Lee, R. H., grandson of mover of Declaration of Independence, reads the document at the Centennial Exposition, ii. 267.
Lee, General Charles, i. 185; a traitor, 188.
Lee, Fort, captured, i. 185.
Leisler, Jacob, i. 104.
Leon, Ponce de. See Ponce de Leon.
Lexington, fight at, i. 181.
Liberal Party, the, ii. 17, 59.
"Liberal Republicans," ii. 204, 205.
Libraries, in colonial America, i. 129.
Lincoln, Abraham, and Douglas, ii. 63; his career and popularity, 64, 65; his election, 65, 81, 86; his inauguration, 98; his difficulties, 98, 99, 191, 192; issues call for volunteers, 102, 105, 106; assassination of, 169, 170; proclaims universal emancipation, 191; re-elected, 193; 197.
Lincoln, General, surrenders, i.

197; puts down Shays's rebellion, 231.
Little Guinea, i. 90.
Livingston, Chancellor, i. 294.
Locke, John, i. 116, 117.
Locke, Richard Adams, the author of the Moon Hoax, i. 378.
Locomotives, the first, in United States, 388, 389.
Logan, General, ii. 138, 217.
London Company, the, i. 31.
Longfellow, H. W., ii. 16.
Long Island, invaded by New Englanders, i. 59; battle of, 185, 214.
Longstreet, General, at Chickamauga, ii. 132.
Lookout Mountain, ii. 133, 134.
Lopez, efforts of, to conquer Cuba, ii. 57.
Lotteries, i. 293, 377.
Loudon, Earl of, in the French and Indian War, i. 149, 150; Franklin's words concerning, 149.
Louisburg, capture of, i. 144; surrendered to France, 145; recaptured, 150.
Louisiana, purchase of, i. 310, 311; its attitude on secession, ii. 86, 88, 89; attitude toward negroes at close of the war, 199; troubles in 1874, 206, 207.
Louisville, settled, i. 283.
Lovejoy, Rev. E. P., murdered, ii. 15.
Lowell, Francis C., and the power-loom, i. 382.
Lowell, J. R., ii. 16.
Lundy and his *Genius of Universal Emancipation*, ii. 12.
Lyon, Matthew, convicted of sedition, i. 276.
Lyon, in St. Louis, ii. 107, 108.

M

Madison, James, the father of the Constitution, i. 233; the Virginia plan the work of, 235; 236; 239; an anti-Federalist, 255; 256; on the federal debt, 260; 277; 279; 346; 357.
Magellan, circumnavigates the globe, i. 16, 17; killed, 16.
Magoffin, Governor, of Kentucky, ii. 108.
Magrath, Judge, ii. 86.
Maine, settlement of, i. 45, 46; Massachusetts buys, 75; remains part of Massachusetts till 1820, 81.
Malvern Hill, battle of, ii. 146, 147.
Man, age and origin of, in America, Introduction, xxv.
Manhattan Island bought, i. 58.
Mansfield, his argument on taxation, i. 165.
Manufactures in the United States, i. 300, 301, 302.
Marble in the South, ii. 249.
Marion, General, i. 197, 202.
Marquette, Père, i. 37.
Marriage and divorce in United States, ii. 301.
Marshall, Tom, i. 333, 334.
Maryland, charter, i. 49; named, 49; settled, 49, 50; government of, 49; conflict of, with Virginia, 49; first assembly of, 51; religious freedom in, 51; anarchy in, 51; during the civil war in England, 52; rebellion in, 53, 54; population of, in 1643, 55; after Stuart restoration, 110; its boundary disputes, 110; tobacco product of, 110; its toleration in religious matters, 111; its agi-

tation in favor of Anglicanism, 111; James II. not popular in, 111; and William and Mary, 111, 112; population of, in 1700 and later, 123; the clergy in, 125; production of iron in, 131; ratifies the Constitution, 239; and secession, ii. 89.
Mason, captain, strategy and tactics in Pequot War, i. 62–65.
Mason and Slidell, ii. 184.
Masons, movement against, i. 376, 377.
Massachusetts, colony, i. 41; government of, 41, 42; polity of, 42; Charles II. and, 71 *et seq.*; its view of its political rights, 73; balks royal commissioners, 74; buys Maine, 75; fails to get New Hampshire, 75; its charter vacated, 75, 76; and Andros, 79; new charter for, 80; population of, in 1650, 42; in 1660, 72; population of, in 1754, 123; her opposition to taxation, 167; the action of, approved by the colonies, 170; in rebellion, 181; ratifies the Constitution, 239.
Massasoit, treaty with, i. 40, 41; his fidelity, 83.
Mather, Cotton, his experiments in witchcraft, i. 97, 98; his book, 98; at the execution of George Burroughs, 100; on "Devil's authority," 102; his learning, 130.
Mather, Increase, i. 96; his learning, 130.
Matron, Margaret, tried as a witch, i. 94, 95.
Matthew, Stanley, ii. 205.
Maximilian, in Mexico, ii. 186.
Mayflower, the, i. 40.
McClellan, General, campaign of, in Virginia, ii. 109; in command of Army of Potomac, 114, 115, 148; his record, 114; his peninsular campaign, 144 *et seq.*; at Fortress Monroe and Yorktown, 144; at Fair Oaks, 145; and the "Seven Days Fight," 145–147; his losses, 147; would not reinforce Pope, 148; removed from command, 150; 193.
McClernand, General, at Fort Donelson, ii. 119; at Vicksburg, 126.
McDonough, on Lake Champlain, i. 320.
McDowell, General, at Bull Run, ii. 110–113; 145.
McGillivray, chief of the Creeks, i. 286.
McKinley tariff, the, ii. 275.
McPherson, General, ii. 137; killed, 138.
Meade, General, in command of Army of the Potomac, ii. 154; at Gettysburg, 154–157; in the Wilderness, 158.
Melendez, Pedro, lands in Florida, i. 20.
Memphis, surrenders, ii. 121.
Menard, the Jesuit, i. 136.
Merrimac, the, sinks the Cumberland, burns the Congress, ii. 175, 176; and the Monitor, 176, 177.
Methodists, spread of the, 231; 232; on war of 1812, 322, 323; in the fourth decade, 375.
Metternich, i. 339.
Mexican War, the, causes of, ii. 22, 23; actions of, 23–28; United States gains from, 28.
Mexico, conquered by Cortez, i. 14, 15; did not recognize claims

of Texas, ii. 22, 23; revolution in, 24; war in, see Mexican War; the taking of the city of, 26, 27; Maximilian in, ii. 185, 186.
Miantinomoh and Uncas, i. 65, 66.
Michigan, population in 1830, i. 371.
Milan Decree, the, i. 316.
Millerism, i. 376.
Minneapolis, ii. 259.
Minnesota, growth of, ii. 255, 259.
Mint, the U. S., erected, i. 252.
Minuit, Peter, buys Manhattan Island, i. 58; leads the first Swedish colony to America, 59.
Minute-men, i. 182.
Miranda, i. 279.
Missionary Ridge, capture of, ii. 133-135.
Mississippi, the, discovered by De Soto, i. 18, 19; exploration of, 136-139.
Mississippi, the territory formed, i. 290; attitude of the State on secession, ii. 86; 88; attitude toward negroes at the close of the war, 199.
Missouri, wishes statehood, i. 341; Jefferson's words concerning, 341; the compromise, 345, 346; efforts to undo the compromise, ii. 38; abrogation of the compromise, 39; 54, 57, 60; and secession, 89; the struggle in, 107, 108.
Mobile, Admiral Farragut at, ii. 179, 180.
Mohawks, the, and French and English, i. 139.
Monitor, the, and the Merrimac, ii. 176, 177.
Monk, General, i. 116.
Monmouth, battle of, i. 188; 214.
Monroe, Fortress, Gen. Butler at, ii. 107; McClellan at, 144.
Monroe, President, i. 317; his doctrine, 339, 340; 346; 357.
Montana, made a State, ii. 253.
Montcalm, General, in French and Indian War, i. 149, 150, at Quebec, 151.
Monterey, captured, ii. 24.
Montezuma, i. 15.
Montgomery, General Richard, i. 189; killed, 190; 216.
Montreal, named, i. 24; taken, 189.
Monts, De, lands on coast of Nova Scotia, i. 24.
Moody, Lady Deborah, repels attack of the Indians, i. 68.
Moon hoax, the, i. 377, 378.
Morey, i. 293.
Morgan, General, at battles of Stillwater, i. 192-194; at Cowpens, 201; his ability as a leader, 217, 218.
Morgan, William, i. 376, 377.
Mormonism, i. 376; ii. 300, 301.
Morris, Robert, i. 219.
Morse, Professor, and telegraphy, ii. 69.
Moscoso, Luis de, i. 19.
Moultrie, Colonel, at Charleston Harbor, i. 184.
Mound-builders, xxvi-xxviii; their cities, xxvii; their arts, xxviii; fate of, xxviii.
Mounds, design of, xxvii; forms of, xxvii.
Music in American churches, i. 300.
Muster, the old-fashioned, i. 294.

N

Nadaillac, De, his theory concerning origin of man in America, xxv.

Napoleon Bonaparte, i. 263; intended Louisiana as a seat of colonial power, 311; his Berlin and Milan decrees, 316, 317; his treatment of United States, 317; his career ended, 323.
Napoleon III., and the Confederacy, ii. 185; his Mexican scheme, 185, 186.
Narragansett Indians, in Pequot war, i. 62–65; in King Philip's war, 86, 87; their strength broken, 87.
Narvaez, Pamphilo de, expedition of, into Florida, i. 17; perishes, 17.
National Road, i. 331, 385.
Navigation acts, the, i. 110, 113, 162.
Navy, the U. S., in 1784, i. 253; the department created, 274; at outbreak of the civil war, ii. 171; operations of, during the civil war, 172–182.
Neale, Elias, ii. 7.
Nebraska made a State, ii. 253.
Negro, the position of, in the South at close of the war, ii. 199, 203, 204; prospects of, 251, 252; kidnapping free negroes, 10.
Neutrality, Washington's proclamation of, 263, 264; results of, 265; England questions American, 317.
Nevada made a State, ii. 253.
New Amsterdam, i. 58; population of, in 1652, 60; after Dutch-Indian wars, 70.
Newark, N. J., population in 1837, i. 372.
New Brunswick, N. J., population in 1837, i. 372.
New England, the confederation of, i. 46, 47; home life in colonial, 92–94; schools in, 92; farm-houses in, 92, 93; religion the centre of life of, 93; farm work and implements, 94; neighborliness among farm people of, 94; diet of farm people, 94; superstitions in, 94, 95; Sunday laws in, 96; public worship in, 96, 97; witchcraft in, 97–102; population of, in 1700 and later, 123, 124; opposition to episcopacy in, 126, 127; produce of, 131; Christmas and Thanksgiving in, 296; attitude of, toward war of 1812, 321, 322; and the tariff, 350.
"New France," i. 23.
New Hampshire, settlement of, i. 45, 46, 74; Massachusetts fails to get, 75; ratifies the Constitution, 239.
New Haven settled, i. 45.
New Jersey, made over to Lord Berkeley and Sir George Carteret, i. 105; character of population, 105; its political vicissitudes, 106; population in 1700 and later, 123; ratifies the Constitution, 239.
New Mexico, ii. 35, 39; its growth slow, 255, 256.
"New Netherland," 57; English conquest of, 103; named New York, 103.
New Orleans, battle of, i. 319, 320; taken by Farragut and Butler, ii. 123–125.
Newport, the stone mill at, i. 2.
Newspapers in Colonial America, i. 128, 129, 158; at beginning of nineteenth century, 297, 298; about 1830, 372, 373.
New York City, begun, i. 58; named, 103; under Governor

Andros, 104; a province of the crown, 104; problems of governors of, 105; population of, in 1697 and later, 123, 124; streets lighted, 135; movements about, in the Revolution, 184, 185; evacuated by the British, 211; Washington's entry into, 212; the first Directory of, 247; condition of, in 1786, 247, 248; population in 1800, 291; in panic of 1837, 364; its clearing house, 73; elevated railroads in, 289, 290.

New York State, population of, in 1700 and later, i. 123, 124; the clergy in, 126; ratifies the Constitution, 239; on the corporation laws, 383.

Nicaragua, expedition against, ii. 58.

Nicholson, Governor, of Virginia, i. 115, 142.

Nightingale, Colonel, i. 175.

Nipmucks, the, at war, i. 85.

North, the business relations between the South and, ii 10, 11; opposition to abolitionists in the, 14-16; position of, on slavery, 17-20, 75, 76; attitude of, toward the Union, 78; apathy and anti-coercion feeling in, at beginning of secession movement, 95, 96; effect on, of firing on Sumter, 101, 102; resources of the South compared with, 82, 83; advantages of the South over, 105.

North, Lord, wavers, i. 207; his words on hearing of Cornwallis's surrender, 208; resigns, 208.

North Carolina and secession, ii. 86, 89; attitude of, at close of the war, 199.

North Dakota made a State, ii. 253.

Northmen, the, in America, i. 1, 2.

Northwest, settlements in the, i. 283.

Nova Scotia, assigned to France, i. 81.

Nullification Ordinance, the, in South Carolina, i. 351, 352.

Nurse, Rebecca, convicted of witchcraft, i. 100, 101.

O

Oglethorpe, Governor of Georgia, i. 118.

Ohio Company, the, i. 229.

Ohio River, discovery of, i. 136.

Ohio, State of, population in 1830, i. 371.

Oil industry, the, ii. 73.

Oldham, John, murdered, i. 62.

"Omnibus Bill," the, ii. 34, 35.

Opera-glasses, coming into use, i. 292.

Ordinance of 1787, the, i. 228, 229, 283; and slavery, 343.

Oregon, question, the, ii. 28, 29; settlements in, 67.

Oriskany, battle of, i. 191.

Ostend manifesto, the, ii. 58.

Otis, James, Jr., i. 162, 163, 167.

P

Pacific, the, discovered by Balboa, i. 13.

Pacific Coast, growth and settlement of, ii. 67; filling up, 255; great railways to the, 255, 286.

Paine, Thomas, his "Common Sense," i. 176.

Pakenham, General, at New Orleans, i. 319.

Palisade, the old, i. 87.
Panic, of 1837, i. 364; of 1873, ii. 293, 294.
Paris, Peace of, i. 152, 159.
Parliament, attitude of, toward colonial affairs, i. 165–168; its vain concession to America, 206; Washington's reply to, 206; resolves to discontinue the war, 208.
Parris, Rev. Mr., and witchcraft, i 98, 99.
Party strife, i. 298–300, 378.
Patent leather in United States, i. 384.
Patterson, General, in Southern Pennsylvania, ii. 110.
Paulding, Commodore, ii. 58.
Peabody, George, ii. 246.
Peace negotiations between England and United States, i. 208, 209.
Pemberton, General, at Vicksburg, ii. 127, 128; surrenders, 129.
Penal legislation, in colonial America, i. 134; in the fourth decade, 375.
Pendleton bill, the, ii. 215, 216.
Penn, William, receives proprietorship of Pennsylvania, i. 106; his character, 106, 107; his trials, 106–108; his rule in Delaware, 109.
Pennsylvania, under proprietorship of William Penn, i. 106, 107; its liberal charter, 107; free from Andros's jurisdiction, 107; its prosperity, 108; under Fletcher's governorship, 108; Gabriel Thomas's history of, 108; population of, in 1700 and later, 123; commerce in, 131; hospital, 135; ratifies the Constitution, 239.
Pequot war, the, i. 62–65; Indians nearly exterminated, 65.
Perestrello, i. 5.
Perrot, Nicholas, explorations of, i. 138.
Perry, Commodore, in war of 1812, i. 320, 321.
Perryville, battle of, ii. 130.
Personal liberty laws, ii. 9, 80, 81.
Petersburg, movements about, ii. 161–163, 165–167; the mine at, 162.
Philadelphia, in 1698, i. 108, 109; streets of, lighted and patroled, 135, 383; the first Continental Congress at, 170; General Howe advances on, 187; population in 1800, 291; first savings banks in, 383; Centennial Exposition at, 261–268.
Philip, King, the war of, i. 83 *et seq.*; scope of his conspiracy, 84; his treatment of white captives, 88; driven to Mount Hope, 90; killed, 91; horrors of war of, 91; his character, 91; his wife and son sold into slavery, 91.
Philippa, wife of Columbus, i. 4.
Phillips, Wendell, as an orator, ii. 15, 16.
Phips, Sir William, i. 142.
Pickens, Fort, ii. 91.
Pickett, General, at Gettysburg, ii. 156, 157.
Pierce, General Franklin, in the Mexican war, ii. 26; elected President, 38; his proclamation against filibustering, 58.
Pilgrims, the, i. 39; shares allotted to, 40; repudiate episcopacy and become Puritans, 42.
Pillow, General, ii. 118, 120; Fort, 121.

Pinckney, i. 272, 273, 305.
Pinzons, the, i. 6, 8.
Pioneer life, i. 288, 289.
Pitt, William, in the French and Indian war, i. 150; on taxation of the colonies, 165, 166.
Pittsburg Landing, battle of, ii. 121, 122, 123.
Pittsburgh, named, i. 150; strike at, ii. 280.
Plymouth Company, the, i. 31, 40, 41.
Plymouth, the colony, i. 40; its treaty with Massasoit, 40, 41; hardships of, 41; growth of, 41; relations of Dutch to, 58.
Pocahontas, marries Rolfe, i. 35.
Pokanokets, the, i. 83.
Political Institutions, origin of, in America, i. 119; spirit of, 378, 379.
Polk, General, ii. 108.
Polk, James K., his method of travel, i. 385, 386; elected President, ii. 21; and the Oregon question, 29.
Polo, Marco, i. 3; his book, 3.
Polo, Nicolo and Maffeo, i. 3.
Ponce de Leon lands on Florida, i. 14.
Pontiac, conspiracy of, i. 152, 153.
Pope, General, captures Island No. 10, ii. 120, 121; in command of Union forces, 147; his defeat and resignation, 148.
Population. See United States and various states and cities.
Portages, the, of the West, i. 138.
Porter, Admiral, ii. 180.
Porter, General Fitz-John, ii. 145.
Port Royal, taken, i. 142, 143; naval expedition to, ii. 173, 174.
Portsmouth, N. H., settled, i. 46.
Portugal, Prince Henry of. See Henry of Portugal.
Portugal leads the world in art of navigation, i. 12; the new world divided between Spain and, 12, 13.
Postal Department, origin of the, i. 251.
Postal service in colonial America, i. 129, 158; in 1800, 297, 298; about 1840, 373; at present time, ii. 295, 296.
Powhatan, i. 35.
Preble, Commodore, i. 313.
Prescott, Colonel, at Bunker Hill, i. 182, 183; 216.
Presidential Succession Act, the, ii. 219, 220.
Press, the. See Newspapers.
Prideaux, General, i. 150, 151.
Prigg's Case, ii. 9.
Princeton, battle of, i. 186, 187.
Procter, Goodman, i. 100.
Providence, Roger Williams settles at, i. 44; population of, in 1800, 291.
Puritans, the, i. 42; allow little liberty of thought, 43; immigration of, to Maryland, 53; found Annapolis, 53; their religion superstitious, 95, 96.
Putnam, General Israel, i. 216.

Q

Quakers, favored by Charles II., i. 73; warring with Baptists, 78; divided, 108; hostility to, in Maryland, 111; on wearing of wigs, 133; against slavery, 343.
Quebec, the colony of, founded, i. 24; capture of, 151; Benedict Arnold and Montgomery advance on, 189, 190.

R

Radisson, explorations of, i. 136.
Railroads, the first in United States, i. 387; projectors encounter hostility, 387; the first route, 389; the first passenger, 389; growth of the system, 390; ii. 68, 69; to the Pacific coast, 255, 286; consolidation of, 286, 287; elevated, 289, 290; Inter-state Railway Law, 298.
Raleigh, Sir Walter, begins colony on Roanoke Island, i. 29; his scheme to establish colonies in America, 29, 30.
Randolph, first Attorney-General, i. 251; an Anti-Federalist, 255; 262; Clay's duel with, 334.
Rasle, Father, i. 144.
Rawdon, General, i. 202.
Reciprocity, treaty of, ii. 232, 233.
Reconstruction, questions of, ii. 194 *et seq.*; three periods, 196; results of, in the South, 244 *et seq.*
Redemptioners, i. 134.
Religion in United States in the fourth decade, i. 375, 376.
Republican Party, the, origin of, i. 254; 326; beginning of the modern, ii. 61; doctrine of, 61; generally favored preserving Union by force, 95; timid members demand peace, 192; views of, on effect of secession, 195; "Liberal Republicans," 204, 205; tariff policy of, 274.
Resumption of specie payment, ii. 278.
Revenue system, the, i. 252; running down, 365.
Revolution, the, causes of, i. 161, 162; preparations for, 170; dates from the Gaspé affair, 175; opening act of, 176; beginning of, 181, 182; the northern campaigns, 189 *et seq.*; the southern campaigns, 196 *et seq.*; closed by battle of Yorktown, 203, 204; ill-conduct of, 205; expense of, 205, 206; cessation of hostilities, 211; character of soldiers in, 213; types of heroes in, 214–219; cost of, 226; debt at close of, 259.
Rhode Island, founded, i. 43, 44; and Charles II., 76, 77; its views on religious freedom, 77; boundary disputes of, 78; submits to rule of Andros, 79; population of, in 1754, 123; ratifies the Constitution, 239.
Ribault, lands on coast of Florida, i. 19.
Richmond, movements around, ii. 145, 161; Union army enters, 167; fire in, 167.
Rives on Washington's proclamation of neutrality, i. 264.
Roanoke Island, colony begun on, i. 29; naval expedition to, ii. 175.
Roebling, John A. and W. A., and the Brooklyn Bridge, ii. 288.
Rosecrans, General, at Stone River, ii. 130, 131.
Rowlandson History, the, i. 87–89.
Rubber, vulcanized, ii. 72.
Ryswick, treaty of, i. 81, 143.

S

St. Augustine, named by Melendez, i. 20.

St. Clair, General, evacuates Ticonderoga, i. 191.
St. Clair, Governor, expedition of, i. 285 287; deposed from command, 288.
St. Johns taken, i. 189.
St. Lawrence, gulf and river, discovered and named, i. 24; 137.
St. Leger, General, expedition of, i. 191, 192.
St. Louis, i. 284.
St. Paul, Minn., ii. 259.
St. Philips, Fort, ii. 123, 124.
Salem witchcraft, i. 98–102.
Santa Anna, in the Mexican war, ii. 24, 25, 26.
Santangel, i. 7.
Sausaman murdered, i. 84.
Savannah, capture of, i. 197; taken by Sherman, ii. 141.
Savings-banks, the first, i. 383.
Saybrook, fort at, i. 45, 62.
Schenectady, the massacre of, i. 141.
Schofield, General, ii. 137.
Schools, in colonial America, i. 127, 128; Catholic attitude toward, in United States, ii. 300.
Schurz, Carl, ii. 205; and the civil service, 214; 217.
Schuyler, General, i. 191, 192.
Scott, Winfield, in war of 1812, i. 318; in Mexican war, ii. 25–27.
Scott, Dred, decision in case of, ii. 44–46, 61.
Scrooby, the church at, i. 39.
Secession, movements after Lincoln's election, ii. 77, 78; whether non-revolutionary, was possible, 78, 79; threats of, 84, 85; attitude of the Southern States toward, 85, 86; South Carolina determines on, 86–88; other States declare, 88; attitude of border States on, 89; question of the effect of, on Confederate States, 194, 196.
Sedgwick, General, ii. 152, 153.
Seminole War, the, i. 366.
Semmes, Admiral, ii. 181, 182.
Sequasson, i. 66.
"Seven Days' Fight," the, ii. 145-147.
Seward, William H., i. 377; and slavery, ii. 17; 95; attempted assassination of, 170; and the Trent affair, 184, 192.
Sewing-machines, ii. 72.
Seymour, Attorney-General, i. 115.
Seymour, Horatio, ii. 203.
Shaftesbury, Lord Ashley Cooper, Earl of, i. 116.
Shays's Rebellion, i. 230, 231.
Shelburne, Secretary of State in England, opens peace negotiations, i. 208.
Shenandoah Valley, explored, i. 116; operations in, ii. 164.
Sheridan, General Phil, ii. 164; "Sheridan's Ride," 164, 165; at Five Forks, 166; 168; at New Orleans, 207.
Sherman, John, his silver bill, ii. 277; and resumption, 278.
Sherman, General W. T., his words concerning battle of Bull Run, ii. 114; at battle of Shiloh, or Pittsburg Landing, 122; at Vicksburg, 125, 126; his movements about Chattanooga, 133-135; goes to Knoxville, 136; his army, 137; his march to the sea, 137-141; takes Atlanta, 139; takes Savannah, 141; his message to Lincoln, 141; marches north, 142; takes Charleston, 142; at

Columbia, 142; routs Johnston at Bentonville, 142, 143.
Sherwood, Grace, ducked, i. 95.
Shiloh, battle of, ii. 121-123.
Shirley, Governor, of Massachusetts, in King George's War, i. 144.
Sibley, Hiram, and telegraphy, ii. 70.
Sickles, General, ii. 153; at Gettysburg, 155.
Silver coinage, i. 360-362; ii. 276-279; Sherman's bill, 277.
Skeleton in armor, the, i. 2.
Slater, Samuel, the "father of American manufactures," i. 303.
Slavery, in early Virginia, i. 33; George Keith against, 108; early history of, 341 *et seq.*; Jefferson and the great Virginians against, 343; Quakers against, 343; ordinance of 1787 and, 343; hostility to, in the States, 343, 344; in the North, 344; in the South, 344; pleas for its existence, 345; pro-slavery arguments, 345, 346; anti-slavery opinions, 346, 347; difficulties of the question, 347; Whigs opposed to, 365, 366; and cotton, ii. 3, 4; social and economic evils of, 4, 5; strict laws concerning slaves, 6, 7; feeling for, strengthened, 7; each State sovereign over, in its own boundaries, 7; growing hatred for, in the North, 8; fugitive slave law, 8, 9, 35, 36, 37; expeditions to kidnap free negroes for, 10; domestic slave-trade, 10; renewed hostility against, 12, 13; "a crime," 13; New England anti-slavery society, 13; positions of the North and South on, 17-20, 75 *et seq.*; ambiguity of the Constitution on, 19; victory of, 33; attitude of Whigs toward, 48, 49, 51, 52, 53, 54; treatment in Congress of petitions against, 50-53; growing feeling on subject of, 57; plans for foreign conquest in behalf of, 59, 60; supremacy of, 59; Alexander Stephens on, 76, 77; fostered anti-democratic habits of thought and action, 77; the Confederate Constitution on, 93; slaves in Union lines, 190; universal emancipation proclaimed, 191, 192.
Slaves. See slavery.
Sleeping-cars, ii. 72.
Smith, Captain John, i. 34.
Smith, General, ii. 119.
Smyth, John, his church at Gainsborough, i. 39.
Social differences in colonial America, i. 133, 134.
Socialism, and state socialism, in United States, ii. 297, 298.
Solis, de, voyage of, i. 13.
Soto, Ferdinand de, his march into interior of America, i. 18; discovers the Mississippi, 18, 19; his death, 19; end of his expedition, 19.
South, the, business relations between the North and, ii. 10, 11; opposition in, to abolitionists, 14; its position on slavery, 17-20, 75 *et seq.*; repudiates the Douglas theory, 44; adopts the Calhoun theory, 44; attitude of, toward the Union, 78 *et seq.*; its indictment against the North concerning personal liberty laws, 80, 81; resources of, compared with

those of the North, 82, 83; strong union spirit still in, 88; well supplied with military stores, 90; bent on setting up a slave empire, 98; advantages of, over the North, 105; reduced to the last extremity, 165, 166; attitude of, just after the war, 194, 199; rejects the XIV. Amendment, 200; fresh turmoil in, 206; results of reconstruction in, 244 *et seq.*; restoration of white rule in, 244, 245; improvements in, 246, 247; loyalty in, 247; prosperity and progress in, 247-251; representation of, in national offices, 247; manufactures in, 248, 249; population, 249, 250; agriculture in, 250, 251.

South Carolina, its nullification ordinance, i. 351, 353; recedes, 352; attitude of, toward secession, ii. 85, 86; secedes, 86-88; attitude toward negroes at close of the war, 199.

South Dakota made a State, ii. 253.

South Kingstown, R. I., fight at, i. 87.

South Mountain, battle of, ii. 148, 149.

Spain, the new world divided between Portugal and, i. 12, 13; gets most of America, 13; hostilities in Florida between France and, 20, 21; lacked in vigor, 21; *reasons for failure* of, to colonize far north in America, 20-22; tyranny of, over her own colonies, 22; Louisiana west of Mississippi ceded to, 139; joins alliance of France and America, 207; her claim to Florida, 336, 337; willing to sell Florida, 339; and Cuba, ii. 58.

Spaniards, treatment of American natives by the, i. 21.

Spanish coins, i. 296.

Specie payment, resumption of, ii. 278.

Spinning machinery, i. 301, 382, 383; ii. 284.

Sports, in United States, in 1800, i. 292.

Spotswood, Governor of Virginia, i. 116, 142, 143.

Spottsylvania, battle of, ii. 159, 160.

"Squatter Sovereignty," ii. 40.

Stamp Act, the, i. 163-167; repealed, 167.

Stanton, Secretary, ii. 95, 202.

Star of the West, the, fired on, ii. 96, 97.

Stark, General, i. 192; his cool courage, 217.

"Starving time," the, in Virginia, i. 34.

State, Department, the, i. 251; rights and the central government, 352, 353; rights in slavery, ii. 7; authority as compared with that of the Union, 78 *et seq.*

Steam, navigation begun, i. 293, 294; fire engines, ii. 72.

Stephens, Alexander H., his position on the slavery question, ii. 76, 77, 80, 89; chosen Vice-President of the Confederacy, 92.

Steuben, Baron, i. 188.

Stevens, Thaddeus, ii. 195.

Stillwater, battles of, i. 192-194.

Stone, Governor, of Maryland, i. 53; deposed, 53; attempts to regain the province, 54.

Stone River, battle of, ii. 130, 131.
Stony Point, attack on, i. 196.
Stoughton, Captain, in Pequot war, i. 64, 65.
Stoughton, Lieutenant-Governor, and witchcraft, i. 99, 100, 102.
Street railways, ii. 72.
Strike of 1877, the, ii. 280, 281.
Stuyvesant, Governor, his administration, i. 60.
Sub-Treasury policy, the, i. 365.
Suffrage, extension of, ii. 296, 297.
Sullivan, General, at Newport, i. 196.
Sumner, Charles, supersedes Webster, ii. 35; attack upon, by Brooks, 43; on secession, 195; 205.
Sumter, Fort, fired upon, ii. 99, 100; evacuated, 101; effect of firing on, in the North, 101, 102.
Sumter, General, i. 197, 202.
Sumter, the screw steamer, ii. 181.
Sun, N. Y., and the Moon hoax, i. 377, 378.
Sunday laws in colonial New England, i. 96.
Sunday-schools, i. 295.
Superstitions in colonial New England, i. 94, 95
Supreme Court, its decision in the Dred Scott case, ii. 45, 46.
Swedes, the first colony of, in America, i. 59; compelled to recognize Dutch supremacy, 60.

T

Talleyrand, his attitude toward America, i. 273; recedes from his arrogant demands, 274.
Tappan, Lewis, his house sacked, ii. 14.
Tariff, the, under Washington's administration, 258, 259; retaliatory measures against England, 259; doctrine of Whig party on, 328, 329; rise of rates after 1816, 348; relations of parties and sections to, 348–350; of abominations, 350; nullification of, in South Carolina, 351–353; Calhoun on, 351; compromise, 352; since the civil war, ii. 273, 274; policy of political parties on, 274, 275; the McKinley, 275; the Wilson-Senate Bill, 275.
Tarleton, General, i. 197, 201.
Taxation, of the colonies, i. 121, 122, 163–170; England's attitude toward, 165; Massachusetts's opposition to, 167; at close of the Revolution, 227; for civil war debts, ii. 178, 187. See also Tariff.
Taylor, Bayard, recites ode at Centennial Exposition, ii. 267.
Taylor, General Zachary, in the Mexican war, ii. 23–25; elected President, 33; urges California to apply for statehood, 34; his death, 34.
Tea troubles in colonial America, i. 169.
Tecumseh, i. 318, 319.
Telegraph, instruction and use of, ii. 69, 70; ocean telegraphy, 71, 72.
Telephone, the, ii. 290, 291.
Temperance movement, i. 373.
Tennessee, becomes a State, i. 282; and secession, ii. 89.
Territory, organized and unorganized, i. 283.
Terry, General, ii. 180.

Texas, France takes possession of, i. 139; the Texan question, 367, 368; declares its independence of Mexico, ii. 21; annexation of, 21, 22; its boundaries, 22; enlargement of, 35; secedes, 88.
Thanksgiving day, i. 294.
Thayendanegea, i. 287.
Theatres in United States in 1800, i. 292.
Thevet, André, i. 25.
Thomas, Gabriel, his history of Pennsylvania, i. 108.
Thomas, General George H., at Chickamauga, ii. 132; at Missionary Ridge, 134, 135; 137; follows Hood, 139; routs Hood's army, 141, 142.
Ticonderoga taken, i. 189; again in British hands, 191.
Tilden, Samuel J., Presidential nominee, ii. 208–210.
Tippecanoe, i. 318; "and Tyler too," 369.
Tobacco, product of Maryland, i. 110; in Virginia, 113.
Topeka Convention, the, ii. 41
Toscanelli, i. 5, 6.
Travel in colonial America, i. 130, 131, 158; in the fourth decade, 385–390; by coach, 385, 386; by canal, 386; transatlantic, 387; by rail, 387-390; improvement in, of late years, ii. 285.
Treasury Department, i. 251, 252.
Treaty of peace between England and America signed, i. 209; its provisions, 210; clause relating to fisheries, 229.
Treaty of Washington, the, ii. 221-228; three rules laid down by, 224, 225; on fisheries question, 233, 234.
Trent affair, the, ii. 184.
Trenton, Washington at, i. 186.
Trumbull, Governor, of Connecticut, quoted, i. 322.
Trusts, ii. 275, 276, 281, 282.
Turner, Captain, his attack on Indians at Connecticut Falls, i. 89, 90; killed, 90.
Turner's rebellion, ii. 5, 6.
Twiggs, General, surrenders, ii. 91.
Tyler, John, elected Vice-President, i. 369.

U

Uncas, i. 62, 64; and Miantinomoh, 65, 66.
"Underground Railroad," the, ii. 36.
Underhill, in Dutch-Indian war, i. 68, 69.
Union, the, attitude of the North and South toward, ii. 78 *et seq.*; the Calhoun theory, 78-80; state authority and, 78; "must be preserved," 101.
United States, debt of, at close of the Revolution, i. 226; critical condition of, 226, 227; population of, in 1790, 244; distribution of population of, 244, 247; government departments of, 251-253; the revenue system, 253; the mint of, 252; judiciary of, 252, 253; England's attitude toward, in 1793, 266, 267; France's insolence toward, 272, 273; war feeling in, 273, 274; centres of population in, 284; land system of, 284; population of, in 1800, 291; rural life, 291; theatres and sports, 292; lotter-

ies, 293; coinage, 295-297, 360-362; postal service, 297, 298, 373, ii. 295, 296; newspapers, 297, 298, 372, 373; party strife, 298, 299, 300; manufactures and inventions, 300, 301; factory system in, 302, 303; bank, 262, 327, 328, 357, 358; internal improvements, 330, 331; and states rights, 353, 354; life and manners in the fourth decade, 370 *et seq.*; population of, in 1830, 370; the West and the East in 1830 and 1840, 370, 371; literature in, 372; charitable institutions, 373; personal character, 373, 374; religions, 375, 376; industrial advance by 1840, 382 *et seq.*; railroads and canals in, 386-390, ii. 68, 69; and Cuba, ii. 58; population and economic prosperity of, in 1860, 66 *et seq.*; seizure by secessionists of property of, 90, 91; borrows from banks to pay war debt, 187, 188; and the Alabama claims, 221-228; her dispute with England on the fisheries question, 229-243; reduction of debt, 271; the finances of, 271 *et seq.*; labor agitations in, 280-283; march of industry in, 284 *et seq.*; population and wealth in 1880, 294; present condition of, 265 *et seq.*; art in, 296; suffrage in, 296, 297; woman in, 296, 297; extension of government surveillance, 298; socialism, 297; restriction of immigration, 299; Catholics in, 299, 300; marriage and divorce in, 301; growth of secular spirit in, 301; its outlook, 301-303; its duty, 302.

Usselinx, i. 59.

Utah, as a territory, ii. 35, 39; its prosperity, 256.

Utrecht, treaty of, i. 143.

V

Valley Forge, i. 187, 188, 213, 214.

Van Buren, Martin, i. 363; and the panic of 1837, 364, 365; his spirit toward slavocrats, 366; Jackson's influence for, 368; and Mrs. Eaton, 379; did not favor annexation of Texas, ii. 21, 53; leads the "free soilers," 59.

Vanderbilt, Cornelius, ii. 286.

Vaudreuil, General, at Montreal, i. 151, 152.

Velasquez, Governor of Cuba, i. 14, 17.

Vera Cruz captured, ii. 25.

Vergennes's prophecy, i. 154, 155.

Verrazano, explorations of, i. 23; names explored land "New France," 23.

Vespucci, Amerigo. See Amerigo Vespucci.

Vicksburg, siege and capture of, ii. 125-129; famine at, 128, 129.

Vienna, fight at, ii. 107.

Virginia, named by Queen Elizabeth, i. 30; the old charter of, 31; early population of, 32; progress and products of, 32; slavery in, 33; social life in, 33; hardships and dissensions in, 34; new charter granted to, 34; the "starving time" in, 34; change in governing colony of, 35; Indian hostilities in, 35; self-government in, 36; Virginia Company dissolved,

37; colonies of, attached to the king and church of England, 37; under Cromwell, 38; conflict of, with Maryland, 49; population of, in 1643, 55; after the restoration, 112; its spirit, population, and resources, 112, 113; under Lord Howard, 115; under Nicholson, 115; under Spotswood, 116; population of, in 1700 and later, 123; the clergy in, 125; the first to urge a reform of the confederation, 232; ratifies the Constitution, 239; resolutions on the sedition acts, 277, 278; and slavery, 343, 344; and secession, ii. 89; McClellan's campaign in, 109; attitude toward negroes at close of the war, 199.

Vries, De, begins settlement of Delaware, i. 58.

W

Waite, Morrison R., ii. 224.

Walker, Sir Hoveden, i. 142.

Walker, William, expedition of, ii. 58.

Wallace, General, ii. 119.

Wallace, General Lew, defeated at Monocacy River, ii. 163.

War Department, the, i. 251, 253.

"War hawks," i. 318.

War of 1812, i. 315 *et seq.*; ill-success of land operations, 317; naval operations, 320, 321; opposition of Federalists to, 321, 322; attitude of New England toward, 321, 322; attitude of various sects toward, 322, 323; Czar Alexander seeks to end, 323; close of, 323; effect of, on the fisheries question, ii. 230, 231.

Warren, Joseph, killed, i. 183.

Wars—See Pequot War; Dutch Indian War; Philip, King, War of; William, King, War of; Anne, Queen, War of; George, King, War; French and Indian War; Revolution; War of 1812; Seminole War; Mexican War; Civil War.

Washington, Fort, captured, i. 185.

Washington, George, birth and education, i. 146, 147; at Great Meadows, 147, 148; only officer not wounded, 148; his advice to Braddock unheeded, 148; Rev. Samuel Davies's words concerning, 148, 149; his words concerning independence, 173; chosen commander by Congress, 183; his character, 183; difficulties before him, 183, 184; his movements about New York, 185; retreats across New Jersey, 185; crosses the Delaware, 186; at Trenton and Princeton, 186; 187; at Brandywine, Germantown, and Valley Forge, 187, 188; distrust of, 187; at Monmouth, 188; sends aid to the South, 198; at Yorktown, 203; his reply to Parliament, 206; his entry into New York, 212; his farewell to his army and retirement, 212; his words at Monmouth, 214; the Custer of the Revolution, 218; his character and ability, 220–222; tributes to, by various writers, 222; his influence, 231; president of the Federal Convention of 1787, 236; inaugurated President, 243, 244; a Federalist, 255; domestic questions of the ad-

ministration of, 258 *et seq.*; signs charter of United States Bank, 262; his proclamation of neutrality toward France and England, 263, 264; Jefferson's criticisms of, 254; Rives's criticism of, 264; justification of his policy toward France, 270; Genet's conduct toward, 272; attended theatres, 292; assailed, 298, 299; his treaty with the Barbary powers, 312; germs of the Monroe doctrine in, 340.
Washington made a State, ii. 253.
Washington, population of, in 1800, i. 291; in peril at opening of Civil War, ii. 103, 104; Confederate forces close to, 106; defenceless after Bull Run, 115; General Early's advance against, 163; the treaty of, 221-228, 233, 234.
Wayne, General Anthony, at Stony Point, i. 196; his expedition against the Indians, 288.
Webster, Daniel, quoted, i. 257; the orator of the Whig Party, 332, 333; his record, 332; 349; 350; 381; ii. 34; superseded by Sumner, 35.
Weed, Thurlow, i. 377.
Wells, David A., ii. 205.
West, the, i. 282 *et seq.*; in 1830, 370, 371; growth of, ii. 66 *et seq.*; the new, 253 *et seq.*; growth of States and cities, 255-260; immigration to, 260.
West India trade, i. 359.
West Virginia admitted to the Union, ii. 109.
Wethersfield founded, i. 45.
Wheeler, William A., ii. 208.
Wheelwright purchases land in New Hampshire, i. 46.
Whig Party, the, origin of, i. 254, 325-327; five doctrines of, 327-331; characteristics of, 331; interesting figures of, 331-335; and the tariff, 349; for paper money, 361; its national spirit, 363; opposed to slavery, 365, 366; adopt Harrison as their candidate, 368; its attitude toward slavery, ii. 48, 49, 51-54; death of, 54.
Whipple, Captain Abraham, i. 175.
White Plains, battle of, i. 185.
Whitney, Eli, and the saw-gin, ii. 3.
Whittier, John G., ii. 16.
Whittier, ii. 262.
Wigs, in colonial America, 132, 133.
Wilderness, the fight in the, ii. 158, 159.
Wilkes, Captain, and the Trent affair, ii. 184.
Wilkinson, General, i. 309, 310.
William, King, vetoes witchcraft act, i. 102; and Maryland, 111; King William's war, 139-141.
William and Mary College, i. 115, 116; Fort, captured, 176.
Williams, Mr., his daughter at Deerfield, Mass., i. 142.
Williams, Roger, i. 43; his views, 43; his exile, 43; settles at Providence, 44; 51; 65; 66; and George Fox, 78.
Wilmot Proviso, the, ii. 33.
Wilson, Henry, challenged by Brooks, ii. 43; becomes a Republican, 55; nominated for Vice-President, 205.
Wilson-Senate Bill, the, ii. 275.
Windsor founded, i. 45; 58.
Winslow, Captain, ii. 181, 182.

Winthrop, Governor, i. 41.
Winthrop, the younger, goes to London on Connecticut's behalf, i. 76, 130.
Wisconsin, population in 1830, i. 371.
Wise, Governor, of Virginia, ii. 85.
Witchcraft, i. 94, 95, 97; Cotton Mather's experiments in, 98; trials for, 99, 100; reaction against, 101, 102.
Wolfe, General, at Quebec, i. 151.
Woman, rights of, ii. 296, 297; higher education of, 297.
Wood, Mayor, of New York, ii. 96.
Wool, tariff on, i. 348.
World's Fair, the, at Chicago, ii. 268–270.
Worship, public, in colonial New England, i. 96, 97.
Wright, General, ii. 164.
Wright, Senator Silas, ii. 53.
Wyatt, Sir Thomas, i. 36, 37.
Wyoming, Pa., massacre at, i. 196.

Y

Yeardley, Governor, of Virginia, i. 36, 37.
Yorktown, battle of, i. 203.
Yorktown, McClellan at, ii. 144.

00031150

Digitized with financial assistance from
Shri Brihad Bhartiya Samaj
on 31 October, 2019